



**DELHI UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY**

# DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Cl. No. Q1:1

D2

Ac. No. 34442

Date of release for loan

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of 5 Paise will be collected for each day the book is kept overtime.



# INDIAN MYTHOLOGY



# INDIAN MYTHOLOGY

ACCORDING TO THE MAHABHARATA,

IN OUTLINE

BY

V. FAUSBØLL.

LONDON

LUZAC & CO.,

16 GREAT RUSSEL STREET

1902.

UDGIVET MED UNDERSTØTTELSE  
AF CARLSBERG-PONDDET.

---

COPENHAGEN - PRINTED BY NIELSEN & LYDICHIE.

TO ELLEN MY WIFE  
MY JOY AND MY LIFE  
FOR HER GOOD-WILL AND LOOK  
I DEDICATE THIS BOOK.





## PREFACE.

If we are ever to find our way through the jungle of Indian Mythology which stretches over so many different places and times, and the prolixity of which is as great as that of Indian nature itself, and if we wish to arrive at a general survey of it, particularly at an exposition of it for the public at large that does not care or trouble to go into details, nor attend to disputed and contradictory matter, -- then we must first have mustered and mastered the different stadia through which it has developed itself. Not until we have had correct and reliable reviews of those stages and have seen what all the different periods have in common, not until then will it be possible to compile a general Indian Mythology. For it will not do to mix up the different periods and call such a mixture or jumble Indian mythology.

Concerning the times of the Veda's we have already some good beginnings in

A. Bergaigne, *La religion Védique*. 1—4. Paris 1878—97.

A. Hillebrandt, *Vedische Mythologie*. 1—3. Breslau 1891—1902.

## VIII

E. Hardy, *Die Vedisch-Brahmanische Periode der Religion des alten Indiens*. München 1893.

H. Oldenberg, *Die Religion des Veda*. 1894.

E. Hopkins, *Religions of India*. London 1896.

A. Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*. Strassburg 1897.

But we still lack similar writings for the time of the Brāhmaṇa's and the Upanishad's, for the time of the Epics and the Purāṇa's, and for the time of the Classical Literature.

We have, however, not a few treatises on single subjects from the Veda's and from later times. I here mention some of these which I have noted down. Others may be found in Hardy, Hopkins, Macdonell and Oldenberg.

Baynes, *The Biography of Bhaga*. In *Actes VIII*.

*Congr. Orient.* Leiden 1891.

Bloomfield, *Soma and the Eagle*. In *J. Am. Or.*

*Soc.* vol. XVI.

Bohnenberger, *Varuna*. Tübingen. 1893.

Bradke, *Dyaus Asura*. Halle 1885.

E. Brandes, *Ushas*. Kbh. 1879.

Bühler, *Zur Mythologie des Rig-Veda*. In *Orient u. Occident*. Bd. I.

Bühler, *Parjanya*. In *Transact. Philol. Soc.* London 1859.

Ehni, *Die Vermählung d. Soma*. In *Z. d. d. m. Ges.* 33. 1879.

Ehni, *Der vedische Mythos d. Yama*. Strassburg 1890.

Ehni, *Die urspr. Gottheit*. Leipzig 1896.

L. Feer, *Vritra et Namutchi dans le MBh.* In *Revue de l'hist. des religions*. Tome 14.

- L. Fœr, *La légende de Rahu*. Paris 1865.
- A. Hillebrandt, *Aditi*. Breslau 1876.
- A. Hillebrandt, *Varuna und Mitra*. Breslau 1877.
- A. Holtzmann, *Die Apsaras*. In *Z. d. d. m. Ges.* 33. 1879.
- A. Holtzmann, *Agni*. Strassburg 1878.
- A. Holtzmann, *Brahman*. In *Z. d. d. m. Ges.* 38. 1884.
- E Hopkins, *Yama*. In *Proc. Am. Or. Soc.* 1891.
- Ch. Lanman, *The Namuci-Myths*. In the *J. R. A. Soc. of Bengal*. 58. 1889.
- Macdonell, *Mythological Studies*. In *J. R. A. Soc.* 1893.
- J. Muir, *Yama*. In *J. R. A. Soc.* Vol. I. Lond. 1865.
- Myriantheus, *Die Agvins*. München 1876.
- Nève, *Le mythe des Ribhavas*. Paris 1847.
- Obry, *Jéhova et Agni*. Amiens 1869 -70.
- H. Oldenberg, *Savitar*. In *Z. d. d. m. G.* 51. 1897.
- Perry, *Indra in the Rigveda*. In the *J. Am. Or. Soc.* vol. XI. 1885.
- Renel, *Agvins et Dioscures*. Paris 1896.
- Rivett-Carnac, *The Snake Symbol in connection with the worship of Siva in India*. In the *J. R. A. Soc. of Bengal*. 48. 1879.
- Roth, *Die höchsten Götter*. In *Z. d. d. m. Ges.* 6. 1852.
- Roth, *Ueber den Soma*. In *Z. d. d. m. Ges.* 35. 1881.
- Roth, *Die Sage von Dschemschid*. In *Z. d. d. m. Ges.* 4. 1850.
- Schermann, *Philosoph. Hymnen*. Strassb. 1887.

Siecke, Liebesgeschichte des Himmels Strassb. 1892.

Streiter, De Sunahsepo. Berol. 1861.

Wallis, Cosmology of the Rigveda. London 1887.

Windischmann, Über den Somacultus. Abh. d. Münch. Akad. IV. 1846.

Winternitz, Der Sarpabali. Mitth. Anthrop. Ges. Wien 1888.

To supply one of the wants I have written this short Indian Mythology according to the Mbh. I have looked upon the matter with the eye of an historian, and not with that of a philosopher. Consequently I have avoided all reasoning and philosophising. On the whole it has been my endeavour to make the exposition as objective as possible by always appealing to the words of the text itself and, so to say, let it speak for itself.

My view of the Indian M., it will be seen, has principally been ethnographical-historical.

I have translated the text as literally as possible for the benefit of young scholars, only in a few places availing myself of Roy's more free rendering of it.

In order not to be influenced by the opinions and views of others, but to be quite independent, I have, while writing this book, not made use of any of the treatises mentioned above. .

To get at the underlying meaning of the myths I have laid much stress upon the names, these, assumedly, indicating their meaning. And it is a matter of course that I, in the quality of an historian, have followed the system or classification of the text.

The reader may perhaps wonder at not finding anything about Gaṇeṣa and Trimūrti. The reason is

that these mythological figures must be considered modern conceptions, Gaṇeṣa, the late Prof. Sørensen told me, only occurring twice in the MBh. and the word Trimūrti not at all.

The three gods Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Īiva, are certainly sometimes mentioned jointly, either at the head of other divinities, or in conjunction with these, but by themselves only in III,15824 (see above p. 111) still without being designated as a trinity. It is not until the time of Kālidāsa that we find the word Trimūrti.

My best thanks are due to Dr. Dines Andersen for his help in carrying this book through the press.

Copenhagen, 13 December 1902.

V. Fausbøll.

## ABBREVIATIONS.

- B R. = Böhtlingk & Roth. Sanskrit Wörterbuch. 1—7.  
St. Petersburg. 1852—1875.
- Fire Forst. = Fire Forstudier til en Fremstilling af den  
indiske Mythologi efter Mahābhārata. Kjøbenhavn  
1897.
- Grassmann = Grassmann's Wörterbuch zum Rig-Veda.  
Leipzig 1873.
- Hariv. = Harivaṃṣa (Mahābh. vol. 4).
- Lassen = Chr. Lassen, Anthologia Sanskrita. Bonnæ  
1868.
- M. M Bh., Mahābh. = The Mahābhārata. Calcutta.  
Vol. I—IV. 1834—39.
- Monier Williams = Sanskrit-English Dictionary. Lon-  
don 1872.
- Pitri, Pitr̥ = Pitr̥.
- R., Rām. = Rāmāyaṇa. 1—2. Bombay. Çāko 1810.
- Rsi, Rishi = R̥ṣi.
- Roy = The Mahābhārata. Translated into English Prose.  
Published by Protap Chandra Roy. 1—18 Parva.  
Calcutta 1884—1894.
- Wilson = H. H. Wilson's Sanskrit Dictionary, or his  
Vishnu Purāṇa.
- Xatri = Kṣatr̥, Kshatriya.
-

# CORRIGENDA.

- Page 1 line 18 read: towards the Sura's.
- 2 line 10 read: dharma's.
- 2 line 12 read: husband.
- line 4 from the bottom read: feeling.
- line 2 fr. the b. read: quarrelled.
- 27 line 9 read: Asuras.
- 28 line 17 instead of "then" read: there is (for the purpose).
- 36 line 5 fr. the b. read: Rāxāmsi cātāni.
- 56 line 2 fr. the b. read: Vivasvat.
- 58 line 1-2 read: between a creation and a dissolution.
- 64 line 1 fr. the b. read: yac.
- 101 line 21 read: gold coins.
- 102 line 15 read: were.
- 118 line 2 read: Vedāir.
- 119 line 6 fr. the b. read: Kāṇṭabhān.
- 121 line 6 fr. the b. read: has.
- 128 line 13 insert within the brackets: I, 4141 and Indralokagamana by Bopp p. 31 v. 38.
- 128 line 10 fr. the b. read: beautiful.
- 136 line 1 read: called.
- 180 at the top read: Vidyādhara, line 1 read six.
- 183 line 5 read: -Chief.

— — — — —



# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

I. ASURA'S.....	Pag. 1
They are the antagonists of the Sura's.	
They are divided into many classes: Dāitya's, Dānava's, Dasyu's, Kālakañja's, Kāleyya's, Klia- lina's, Nāga's, Nivāta-Kavaca's, Pauloma's, Piṣa- ca's and Rākasa's.	
The principal ones are the Dāitya's, the Dā- nava's and the Rākasa's.	
The origin of the Asura's.	
Daxa prajāpati's 13 daughters were married to Kaṣyapa prajāpati.	
Diti was Daxa's eldest daughter, her sons were called Dāitya's, Danu's Dānava's and Aditi's Āditya's, who were also named Sura's or Deva's .....	2
The strongholds and haunts of the Asura's ....	3
Description of the Asura's .....	5
They are very powerful, taking mountains and trees and using them as clubs .....	6
They are skilled in sorcery and magic power. understanding how to transform themselves and how to make themselves invisible ..	6
Names of single Asura's .....	8

	The principal classes of them are:	Page.
A.	Dāitya's.....	9
B.	Danava's.	
	Rahu or Svarbhānu who strives to devour Sun and Moon.	
	Churning of the ocean, strife of the Deva's and the Asura's concerning the Amṛta and the Sovereignty of the world.	
C.	Dasyu's.....	28
D.	Nāga's or Sarpa's or Serpents.	
	Their king is Āirāvata.	
	The Sarpa's are sometimes mentioned as a species different from the Nāga's.....	29
	Different names for the Naga's.	
	Description of the Naga-loka, also called Patāla and Niraya.	
	Principal town Bhogavatī. Vāsuki their king	
	Their haunts.	
	Çeṣa is the most important of them.	
	Description of the Nāga's.	
	They consist of several races.....	30
	Names of single Nāga's.	
E.	Raxasa's.	
	Description of them.	
	Their haunts.....	31
	Names of Rāxasa's.....	37
F.	Piçāca's.	
	They are much like the Rāxasa's.....	38
	<hr/>	
	Cause of the bloody warfare between the half-brothers, the Asura's and the Sura's.....	39

	Page.
The Deva's (Sura's) killed the Asura's and won Heaven .....	40
Originally the Asura's were good and just, and Çrī dwelt with them from the very beginning of the world, but afterwards they opposed themselves to the law of Brahma, dethroned even for a time Indra and put Vali in his place .....	41
— — —	
Several like traits in the description of the different kinds of Asura's prove them to belong to one and the same race, although they have many different names .....	41
That this race must have been the aboriginal population of India is proved in many ways:	
The Asura's live in mountains, forests and in the earth.	
They are older than the Sura's, and the earth belonged originally to them.	
They live generally in enmity with the Sura's and disturb the sacrificial fire, still they sometimes form alliances with them.	
There is yet a people called Nāga's living in the mountains of Bengal and Assam.	
11. SURA'S .....	43
The Sura's or Gods are called Deva's and Divāukas'es, Tridaça's and Amara's; meaning of these words.	
They dwell in Trīdiva, in Svarga, and from here they descend to Meru in Himālaya which	

is their meeting place and pleasure ground. The beauty of Meru is described.	
The signs of the Deva's.....	44
The Gods are deified human beings who have attained Svarga by their good deeds.	
The deeds of the Sura's.....	45
Churning of the ocean and slaughter of the Asura's, according to Rāmāyana. By churning the sea came forth: Halāhala, Dhan- vantari, Laxmī, Vāruṇī, Uccāihṛavas, Kāustu- bha, and at last the drink of immortality, Amṛta.	
For this a frightful struggle ensued between the Asura's and the Sura's which ended in the destruction of the Asura's and the vic- tory of Indra and the Gods.	
There are several classes of Deva's:	
A. Āditya's .....	55
They are 12, sons of Kaṣyapa and Aditi. called Devamātar, the mother of the Gods, they are the foremost of the Deva's and very mighty.	
Their names. Four different lists.....	56
1. Brahman.....	57
A. Brahma (Neutrum) is	
a) objectively the impersonal prime- val being from which all existence has sprung and into which it returns, which is unrevealed, invisible, unborn, unchange- able, imperishable and has neither be- ginning nor end etc. The time between	

## XVIII

	Page
two kalpa's. In an objective sense Brahma is sometimes identified with Kāla who is again identified with Mṛtyu.....	62
Çiva and Viṣṇu are sometimes characterized in the same way as Brahma ..	63
b) In a subjective sense Brahma is that condition of a human being through which it has been transformed into being the same as the impersonal Brahma, because by penance and knowledge it frees itself from all cravings and passions and attains Nirvāṇa : the extinction of all desire for existence and will not be reborn, but is absorbed into the objective Brahma .....	63
B. Brahma (Masculinum).....	69
Brahmā is the personal form of the impersonal Brahma. As such he is the first creator, the fashioner of all things. He is therefore called Lokakṛt, Trilokakṛt, Viçvakṛt and Dhātā, especially often he is designated as Prajāpati, Lord of the creation. He is also called Sarvalokapitāmaha, the grandfather of the whole world and Lokapitāmaha or simply Pitāmaha, the Grandfather.	
As offspring of the first Prajāpati there are mentioned 7 others .....	71
There are even longer lists of Prajāpati's and their descendents.	
In Viṣṇuism Viṣṇu is identified with Brahmā	72

# NIX

	Pag.
Brahmā's worlds lie above Svarga. Brahmā's seat is on Mahāmeru.	
His assembly-hall is described .....	73
Brahmā has 4 faces .....	74
His wife, chariot, emblem, altar.	
The deeds of Brahmā.	
A great offering on the top of Himavat.	
The sword of law .....	75.
 2. Sūrya, the Sun.	
Names of the Sun.	
Meaning of Aditi, the mother of the sun.	
His person, earrings, wife, sister, daughter, son.	
His car, charioteer.	
The myth of Aruṇa, the charioteer of the Sun.	77
The myth of Garuḍa, the king of the birds .	78
Names of the sun .....	80
Two phases of the function of the sun.	
 3. Indra.....	81
Indra is the head of the Sura's.	
He obtained the Indraship by surpassing all the other gods by his sacrifices or after killing a number of Dāitya's and Dānava's and the greatest of all Asura's to wit Vṛtra. Hence his general names Devarāja, Devādhipa, Mahendra and the like.	
Meaning of the word Indrā .....	82
His wife is Çacī, his elephant Āirāvata or Āirāvata, his horse Uccāihravas, his chariot is drawn by 10,000 reddish yellow horses, his flagstaff is Vijayanta.	
His charioteer is Mātali.	

	Page.
Mātali's wife is Sudharmā and his daughter Gūṇakeçī who was married to the Nāga Sumukha .....	83
Indras weapons were the thunderbolt Vajra with which he struck off Vṛitra's head. the bow Vijaya and the trumpet Devadatta. His kingdom is called Svar, Svarga. Svar- loka, Div and Devaloka, the world of light and the shining gods.	
The entrance to Svarga is called Svarga- dvāra and at the gate stands Āirāvata .....	84
From the Himavat-mountains, the centre of which is Meru, you ascend through the air to Svarga .....	85
Indra's city is called Amaravati, his assembly- hall Puskaramulinī .....	87
Who comes to Indra? those that sacrifice, those who do penance, and those who behave like heroes in battle.	
Indra's special names and their meaning.....	88
The deeds of Indra.	
Description of a happy time after Indra had become the ruler of the three worlds .....	89.
But prosperity made Indra arrogant, he seduced Ahalyā, killed Namuci although he had formed a friendship with him, and even made himself guilty of murdering the brāhmaṇa Viçvarūpa Triçiras, Tvaṣṭar's threeheaded son. Tvaṣṭar created Vṛitra. A long war be- tween Vṛitra and Indra. The gods have recourse to Viṣṇu. At last Indra killed Vṛitra	

with the thunderbolt which Viṣṇu had entered. But shortly after Indra became low-spirited, reflecting on his own duplicity and the brāhmaṇa-murder he had committed. He flew and hid himself in the stalk of a lotus in a lake. Then the earth became desolate, for it had no king. The rivers ceased to flow, and the animals perished for want of rain. Gods and Ṛṣi's persuaded Nahuṣa to become king, but he desired Çacī, Indra's wife. The gods sought the advice of Viṣṇu. Indra performed a sacrifice of horses to Viṣṇu. Indra was freed from his fear, came back and was again crowned king of the gods, while Nahuṣa was cast down from heaven.

Surabhi, mother of all cows, and her daughters Sarvakāmadug'hā, Indra's wishing cow, is also called Kāmadug'hā or Kāmaduh and Nandinī. She was once stolen by Dyo (Dyāus) ..... 92

Parjanya is a distinct deity for the rainfall originating in the power and violence of the rain in India ..... 93

The rain-cloud was personified and became the Raingod ..... 97

Parjanya is originally identical with Indra .... 98

4. Varuṇa, the god of the ocean ..... 99  
Varuṇa means originally the heavenly sea of light which surrounds all things.

Varuṇa is the light of night, and Mittra the light of day.



	Page
In the Mahābhārata Varuṇa means only the god of the ocean.	
His names.	
His realm lies in the west .....	100
His dwelling is the ocean which is described with its contents.	
His city, palace, assembly-hall in which he sits with his wife surrounded by Nāga's, Dāi- tya's, Dānava's and many others.	
His person.	
The name of his wife is Siddhi or Gauṇī, his son Puṣkara is married to Soma's daugh- ter Jyotsnākālī .....	101
His minister is Sunabha.	
He has a noose and a trumpet.	
The deeds of Varuṇa.	
Varuṇa stole Utathya's wife, but when Uta- thya drank up all the waters and Varuṇa consequently got faint-hearted and the rivers disappeared in the desert, then Varuṇa was obliged to restore the wife of Utathya.....	102
5. Viṣṇu.	
His most frequently recurring names are Nārā- yaṇa and Hari.	
He was the youngest of the Āditya's.....	103
His dwelling was on the top of Mount Man- dara.	
Higher than Brahmā's seat is Viṣṇu's place, the pure, the everlasting light which they call Parambrahma.	

Thither go the unselfish, they who are absorbed in contemplation and devotion; even Brahmārṣi's and Mahārṣi's do not go there, but only Yati's that have mastered their passions.

Viṣṇu's person: he has lotus eyes, four arms, on his breast he has a mark, called Çrīvatsa, this mark he received when the great sage Bharradvāja threw water on him because he disturbed him while at prayer. On his breast he wears the jewel Kāustubha.

A Lotus sprung from his navel when he lay in contemplation, and in that Brahma with the four faces appeared.

His raiment is yellow.

His couch or bed is the serpent Çeṣa or Ananta who holds the earth at Brahmā's command, and on which Viṣṇu rests in yoga-sleep ..... 104

He has a golden chariot with 8 wheels..... 105

His sign is the bird Garuḍa.

His weapons are a ṣaṅkha or war trumpet, a cakṛa or discus, called Sudarçana, a gadā or club, and a bow, called Çārṅga.

His wife is Laxmī, also called Çrī who is the Goddess of Fortune and Beauty. Viṣṇu's names ..... 107

Viṣṇu, in the eyes of his worshippers, assumes the character of Brahmā as does also Çiva.. 108

Two phases of Viṣṇu's character: his yoga or devotion and his power of salvation.

	Page.
As devotee he is called Yogin, Mahayogin and Yogumāya.....	110
His upholding and rescuing power appears in his incarnations, avatāra's	
His avatāra as a dwarf or Viṣṇu's three strides.....	112
His avatāra as a boar.....	114
His avatāra as a man-lion.....	116
His avatāra as a horse's head, or the theft of the Veda's.....	117
His avatāra as Kṛṣṇa.....	121
Viṣṇu's heroic deeds.....	122
<b>B. Apsaras'es. Gandharva's. Cāraṇa's .....</b>	<b>123</b>
Description of the Apsaras'es, the „dancers“.	123
Names of the Apsaras'es.....	125
Gandharva's or musicians.....	126
Cāraṇa's or minstrels .....	127
<b>C. The Aṣvin's, the physicians.....</b>	<b>128</b>
The deeds of the Aṣvin's.....	129
The tale of Cyavana and Sukanyā. The Aṣvin's meet with Sukanyā just as she had come out of the bath and was naked. They fall in love with her and ask who she is, she says that she is king Çaryāti's daughter and Cyavana's wife. The Aṣvins: why, o beauti- ful lady, dost thou serve an old decrepit husband, forsake Cyavana and accept one of us for husband. Sukanyā answered: I am de- voted to my husband. The Aṣvins said: we are the celestial physicians, if you choose one of us	

we will make your lord young and graceful. Do thou bring thy husband here, and let him enter into the water. And Cyavana and the Aṣvin's entered the water together. And the next moment they all came out in the most beautiful forms and young, and all possessed of the same appearance. The Aṣvin's: now, choose the one that pleases thee most. She deliberated and at last ascertaining the identity of her husband, even chose him. And Cyavana said: since at your hands I, an old man, have obtained youth, I will make you drinkers of the Soma in the presence of the lord of the celestials himself. And thus the Aṣvin's were made divine, notwithstanding that Indra had denied their right to the Soma-offer, they being by birth Qūdra's.

- D. The Lokapala's, or the Guardians of the world. 134  
 They are 4: Indra, Agni, Varuṇa and Yama.  
 Yama..... 135  
 His most frequently recurring names.  
 He is called Yama because he keeps mankind in check..... 136  
 He is Pitṛ-rāja because he rules in the kingdom of the dead.  
 He is Vāivasvata as the son of the shining sun, Vivasvata-tanaya.  
 Yama's kingdom is in the south under the earth, it is generally called Yama-rāṣṭra or Pitṛ-loka, also Mahāniraya.

In this realm is the Vaitaraṇī-river and the  
Rāurava-hell.

His dwelling is Saṃyamana.

His assembly-hall, built by Viçvakarman, shines  
like bright gold. Here is neither sorrow nor  
decrepitude, neither hunger nor thirst. Many  
sages and kings assemble there to pay hom-  
age to Yama. And there is singing and  
dancing and merriment from Gandharva's and  
Apsaras'es. . . . . 137

His wife is Dhūrmorṇā.

His messengers wear black apparel, have red  
eyes, bristling hair, and eyes and noses like  
a crow.

His charioteer is Roga, sickness . . . . . 138

His weapons are a staff, Yama-daṇḍa, and  
a noose.

He has two four-eyed dogs, offspring of Sa-  
ramā, devaḥunī.

His names indicate two sides of his character:

He is first the God of Death who destroys  
life in man, he is therefore called Lokān-  
takṛt, and is accompanied by Mṛtyu, death,  
and surrounded by hundreds of dreadful di-  
seases.

His messengers, Yamadūta, lead the fatigued  
through a barren district, where there is  
neither shade nor water, on to Yama.

Secondly he is the King of the Dead, the just  
Judge, Dharmarāja, he is not only wise in  
dharma, but he is himself Dharmā, and the

	Page.
whole world has its root in dharma, and as the avenger he is himself Daṇḍa, and Daṇḍa is the symbol of his righteous judgements...	139
To the delightful regions of Yama the righteous go after death, but in Hell the bad are punished.	
Punishments of Hell .....	140
There are two roads, one leading to the Pitṛ's and one leading to the deva's.	
Yama's deeds.	
The beautiful tale of Sāvitrī who saves her husband from death by her fidelity.	
<b>E. The Maruts, the Gods of the Winds.</b>	
They are particularly combined with Indra who is called Marutvat. The function of the Maruts is to protect Indra.	
<b>F. The Pitṛi's, spoken of under Yama.</b>	
<b>G. Prajapati's under Brahmā.</b>	
<b>H. Ṛbhu's , .....</b>	144
The Ṛbhu's constitute the highest class of the gods, they neither need sacrifices nor amṛta. They are without <sup>o</sup> desire and passion. They are the eternal gods who survive every kalpa, therefore even the Deva's wish for that state.	
<b>I. The Ṛṣi's .....</b>	146
Beside the Ṛṣi's generally, there are mentioned Great-Ṛṣi's, Deva-Ṛṣi's, Brahman-Ṛṣi's and King-Ṛṣi's. Of the first there are 7 with Vāciṣṭha at their head, these must be identical with the 7 prajāpati's.	

## J. The Rudra's.

The Rudra's are 11 in number with Çiva as their protector.	
The duality in the Çiva-myth. Rudra is the oldest part of the myth .....	147
Çiva's ordinary names.....	148
He is a son of Brahmā.	
He dwells on the holy Himavat.	
He has red hair, four faces. Tilottamā tempted him.	
He has three eyes. How he got a third eye	149
He has a blue neck. How he got it.	
He has ten arms .....	150
He is clothed in skins.	
His conveyance, driven by Kala, is a white bull, serving both as a chariot and a banner.	
The bull is described.	
His favorite weapon is the spear Pāçupata also called Brahmaçiras, his battle-axe paraçu.	
His bow called Pināka is a mighty serpent with seven heads.....	151
With his trident was formerly king Mandhātara and all his army annihilated.	
His wife is Umā, king Himavat's younger daughter, also called Pārvatī, the daughter of the mountain, Durgā the unapproachable, and Gāurī, the dazzling white.	
The sage Bhṛgu cursed Himavat to produce no pearls.	
Kuvera is Çiva's good friend.	

## XXIX

	Pag
Çiva's special names may be classified under two definitions:	
He is first the severe, the terrible, the appalling, the destroying .....	154
As the devastating power, sweeping away everything he is called Hara.	
He is fever, disease, death.	
He is the mighty ruler and is called Īçāna, Maheçvara, Sthānu, Vṛṣa, Giriça, Paçupati..	155
As destroyer he is identified with Kāla.....	156
He is hideous.	
Secondly he is the mild, the friendly, the merciful; as such he appears mostly under the names of Çiva and Çāṅkara.....	157
In elucidation of the mildness of Çiva is told a story of a brāhmaṇa who had his child restored to life by the grace of Çiva.	
Çiva is also described as the god who is fond of music, singing and dancing.	
Çiva as brahmacārin and practiser of penances .	158
He lives at crematories and has a skull in his hand .....	159
† Durgā, his wife, has the same double character as her husband.	
Çiva's heroic deeds .....	160
The preeminence of Gaṅgā .....	161
The tale about king Sāgara and his sons and the descent of Gaṅgā.	
Daxa's offer or Çiva's wrath .....	163
Kāma is made incorporeal.....	164
Kāma's names.	



	Pag.
Çiva kills Bhaga and puts out his eyes.....	165
Çiva kills the Asura Andhaka.....	166
Çiva destroys the Tripura, the Trifort, the three Fortresses.	
K. The Sadhya's and	
L. The Siddha's are perfect, blessed spirits .....	167
The Siddha's dwell mostly in the land of Uttara- Kuru which is described as a Paradise.	
M. The Vāḷakhilya's, very small Rṣi's.....	170
N. The Vasu's, shining, from vas, to shine. There are 8 Vasu's, sons of Manu prajapati. The Vasu's were cursed by Vaciṣṭha and be- came on earth the children of Gaṇḍa and king Çāntanu, but were saved back to heaven by Gaṇḍā .....	171
1. Agni.	
Agni is the lord of the Vasu's.	
His name. His wife.	
His son Skanda is also called Kumāra and Kārtikeya. His origin.	
Skanda's wife is Devasenā.....	172
His person. His banner. His spear. His im- mense strength, he thrust his spear into the ground.	
Agni has a double character .....	173
He represents the sacrificial fire.	
He represents the cosmical fire .....	174
The deeds of Agni.....	175
Agni helps king Nila.	
Agni is cursed by Bhṛgu.	

2. Vāyu, the wind.....	Page 176
Vayu or Vāta, Marut, Anila, and Pāvana are the names of the wind.	
3. Soma, the Moon.....	177
His ordinary names. His father was Atri. Soma seeks Rohini's society most. Daxa cursed him.	
Having bathed himself in Hiranya-tīrtha Soma freed himself from sin.....	
	179
The effect of the curse. Soma's daughters Bhadrā and Jyots- nakālī.	
0. Vidyadhara's.....	180

### III. YAXA'S.

Yaxa a differentiated form of raxas.	
The Yaxa's have succeeded from the Rāxasa's with Kuvera at their head.	
The function of the Yaxa's.	
Kuvera's lineage. His names.....	181
Kuvera is driven from Ceylon.....	182
Himavat mountains.....	183
Kuvera's land .....	184
Kāilāsa and Gandhamādana.	
Kuvera's great forest Nandana, his grove Cāitraratha .....	
	185
His river Mandakinī. His lotus-lake Nalinī.	

## XXXII

### Appendix.

Pag.

India is the cradle of fairy tales .....	189
A lot of fairy legends have been published ..	190
Some of the tales have wandered through literature from east to west, others have been transmitted from land to land all over the earth by word of mouth. This has been proved by Theodor Benfey and others.	
Some of the principal elements in the fables are gold, silver and precious stones .....	191
India has always been richly endowed with these. This is proved by the early records of the ancient Greeks.....	
A number of mines are still being worked in India.	192
The great foreign conquerors desired these riches.	
The English were the strongest power. They now possess the great, rich India and govern it by a Viceroy.	

## I. THE ASURA'S.

---

Asura is the common name for all the antagonists of the Sura's. They consist of several classes, viz.: Dāitya's, Dānava's, Dasyu's, Kālakañja's, Kāleyya's, Khalin's, Nāga's, Nivāta-Kavaca's, Pāuloma's, Piçūca's and Rāxasa's.

Of these the most frequently mentioned are the Dāitya's, the Dānava's and the Raxasa's. The Piçūca's, often combined with the Rāxasa's, are spoken of (VI, 3354) side by side with Māgadha's and Kālīṅga's, which seems to prove them to be the original people of the country (the Aborigines). The same is perhaps the case as regards some of the others, f. i. the Nāga's, as there is even now still to be found a people of this name in the mountains of Bengal; compare below.

The Yaxa's with their king Kuvera were originally also Asura's, but seem to have made friendly advances to the Sura's and to have been welcomed by them and received into their midst; see below.

The Asura's were the offspring of 13 of Daxa prajāpati's daughters<sup>1</sup> and Kaçyapa prajāpati (Rām. III p. 470, 11: 8 daughters).

---

<sup>1</sup>) According to Rām. Daxa had 60 daughters, and acc. to M. I, 2619: 18, acc. to IX, 2018: 27, acc. to XII, 7297: 50.

Tasya pūrvam ajāyanta  
 daça tisraç ca Bharata  
 prajāpater duhitaras,  
 tāsām jy eṣṭhābhavat Ditiḥ,  
 Sarvadharmaviṣeṣajñāh,  
 puṇyakīrtir mahāyaçāḥ  
 Mārīcaḥ Kāçyapas tāta,  
 sarvāsām abhavat patih. XII,<sup>7587</sup>.

- o: To him were first born 13 daughters, of these  
 Diti was the eldest. The in all dharmas well  
 versed, famous and most honourable Kaçyapa,  
 Marīci's son, became the husband of them all.

Sarve Daxayaṇīputtraḥ  
 Prajapatyū mahabalāḥ XII,<sup>8271</sup>.

- o: All the mighty sons of Daxa's daughter  
 and K. Prajapati.

Diti was Daxa's eldest daughter (XII,<sup>7587</sup>), her  
 sons were called Dāitya's, Danu's Danava's, Kaçya-  
 pa's sons by Aditi Āditya's (Deva's or Sura's) which  
 is not only used as the common name for the Sura's,  
 but also as the denomination of a single class of them.  
 The Āditya's were the younger half-brothers of the Asura's.

Bhrātṛnām nāsti sāubhrūtraṁ  
 ye 'py-ekasya pituh sutaḥ  
 rājyahetor vivāditāḥ

Kaçyapasya Surāsuraḥ XIII,<sup>558</sup>.

- o: Between brothers there is not (always) good  
 brotherly feelings,  
 they who were begotten of one and the same father  
 quarrelled for sovereignty's sake  
 (to wit) Kaçyapa's (sons), the Sura's and the Asura's.

Idan tu çrūyate Partha

yuddhe devāsura purā:

Asurā bhrātaro jyeṣṭhā

Devāṇāṃ cāpi yaviyasaḥ. XII,1184; cfr. Rām.

VII,11, 16. Vṛhadār. Upanishad, brāhm. 3.

o: But this is told, o Pṛthā's son,

(to have been so) in the battle between the D. and  
the Asura's of yore:

the Asura's (were) the elder brothers  
and the Deva's the younger.

The Asura's have their strongholds and haunts in mountain caves. In the bowels of the earth do they dwell in the region of Patāla where they have several large cities: Hiraṇya-pura (V,3567. VII,1997, III,12197), Pragjyotiṣa (V,1887. 4408). Nirmocana (V,1890). Further we find them in the sea where bound they were delivered into Varuṇa's keeping. But also in Heaven they have three fastnesses, one of iron, one of silver, and one of gold, from where they attack the Triloka, the three worlds (VII,9555 — XIII,7482. VIII,1402 1421. Cp. below and Fire Forstudier p. 40). Hence, however, they were thrust down to earth (I,2482).

All this appears from the following passages:

Sa kadācit samudrānte

kasmimṇcid girigahvare

Valim Vāirocanim Vajrī

dadarçôpasasarpa ca. XII,8222

o: Once, on the seashore,

in a mountain cave

saw Indra Vali Virocana's son

and drew nigh unto him.

Bhūmim kecit pravivṛṇuh  
 parvatān apare tathā  
 apare jagmur ākāṣam  
 apare 'mbhas samāviṣan. XII, 6180. I, 1186.

- o: Some entered the earth,  
 and others (disappeared) in the mountains,  
 still others ascended into the air,  
 others again plunged into the water.

Hiraṇyapuram ity-eva  
 khyātāṁ puravarāṁ mahat  
 Dāityānām Dānavāṇāṁ ca  
 māyūcatavicarinaṁ  
 analpena prayatnena  
 nirmitāṁ Viṣvakarman  
 Mayena manasā sṛṣṭāṁ  
 Pātāla-talam aṣṛitāṁ V, 3567. VII, 1997.

- o: Hiraṇyapura so called  
 the great remarkable city  
 that belongs to the Dāitya's and the Dānava's  
 who practise hundreds of kinds of magic  
 (this town) that was built with much labour  
 by Viṣvakarman  
 and devised by Mayā  
 lies in the Pātāla district.

Tato mahīm lavanajalāṁ ca sāgaram  
 mahāsurāḥ pravivṛṇuh arditāḥ surāḥ I, 1186.  
 III, 8797. 12063. 12085.

- o: Thereupon the earth and the ocean with the  
 salt water  
 the great Asura's entered pressed by the Sura's.

Evam uktas tato Dharmo  
 niyogāt Parameṣṭhinah  
 Varuṇāya dadāu sarvān  
 baddhvā Dāiteya-Dānavān.  
 Tān baddhvā Dharmapāṇāṁ ca  
 svāṁ ca pāṇān Jaleṣvareṣu  
 Varuṇaḥ sāgare yatto  
 nityaṁ rakṣati Dānavān V.4303.

- o: Thus accosted then Dharma  
 at the command of the most High  
 delivered to Varuṇa all  
 Dāitya's and Dānava's after having bound them.  
 And having bound them with Dharma's nooses  
 and with his own bonds  
 watches for ever Varuṇa, the Lord of the waters,  
 carefully the Dāitya's and the Dānava's in the  
 ocean.

Samudram aśan aśan  
 Dānavālayam uttamam. VIII,1476. III,12079.

- o: They made an axis of the ocean  
 that excellent abode of the Dāitya's.

They are described as follows: they are very  
 powerfull, in battle they uproot trees and hurl  
 the tops of mountains against their enemies.

Atha Dāityabalād ghoran  
 niṣpapāta mahābalaḥ  
 Dānavo Mahiṣo nāma  
 pragrhya vipulāṁ giriṁ.  
 Te taṁ ghanāir ivādityaṁ  
 dṛṣṭvā samparivāritāṁ  
 taṁ udyatagiriṁ rājan



vyadravanta divāukasaḥ

Atlābhidrutya Mahiṣo

devāṃc cixepa taṃ girim. III, 14598.

- o: Thereupon out of the dreadful army of the Dāitya's  
the mighty Dānava Mahiṣa by name leapt forth  
after having seized a great mountain,  
seeing him like the sun surrounded by thick clouds  
and with an uplifted mountain, o king,  
the inhabitants of heaven fled in all directions.  
There upon Mahiṣa rushed forward  
and hurled that mountain against the Gods.

Athāsya çailaçikharāṃ

Keçī kruddho vyavāsrjat III, 14252, XII, 8290.

- o: Upon which Keçin  
wrathful cast a rock top against him.

Te pragrhya mahāghoran

parvatān parighan druman

vyaxobhayanta salilāṃ

utthitāṃ çatayojanāṃ

Abhyadravanta devāṃs te

sahasrāṇi daçāiṣa hī XIII, 7292, XII, 8290.

- o: Taking enormous mountains  
and (using) trees as clubs  
they troubled the water  
which instantly rose a hundred yojana's into the air,  
whereupon they rushed against the gods  
(numbering) ten thousand.

They are skilled in sorcery and magic power,  
especially do they understand transforming them-  
selves into all sorts of shapes and making them-

selves invisible, and they frighten people with their awful roaring.

Tato Nivātakavacā

mām ayudhyanta māyayā etc. III,12121.

- o: Hereafter the Nivātakavaca's  
strove against me with magic arts.

Tathā tāu bhṛṇasamkruddhāu

rāxasendrāu mahābalāu

nirviṣeṣam ayudhyetām

māyābhir itaretaraṁ etc. VII,1102. XII,10117.

- o: Thus those two very wrathful  
Rāxasa-princes, the mighty ones,  
fought blindly against each other  
with sorcery.

Gacchadhvaṁ sarṣigandharvā

yatrāsāu viṣvarūpadhṛk (o: Vṛtra) V,201.

- o: Go ye together with ṛṣi's and gandharva's  
thence where you (Vṛtra) who assumes all shapes  
(dwells).

Vartamāne tatthāyuddhe

Nivātakavacāntake,

nāpaçyam sahasā sarvān

Dānavān māyayā vṛtān

Adṛçyamānās te Dāityā

yodhayanti sma māyayā,

adṛçyenâstravīryeṇa

tān apy-aham ayodhayam etc. III,12121.

- o: Whilst thus the battle raged whose object  
was to destroy the Nivātakavaca's,  
on a sudden I could not see

all the Dānava's who were hidden by magic,  
 those Dāitya's who had become invisible  
 warred with sorcery,  
 with invisible armed power  
 I also fought them.

Āmānuṣam atho nādaṁ  
 sa mumoca mahāsuraḥ XII,<sup>10149</sup>.

Jahi Bhīṣmaṁ raṇe Rāma  
 garjantaṁ Asuraṁ yathā V,<sup>7031</sup>.

As Asura's are named the following beside many  
 others (see I,<sup>2525</sup> foll.);

Anuhrada	Triṇiras	Madhu	Virocana
Ilvala	Daṁṇa	Maya	Vivindya
Upasunda	Dhundhu	Mahiṣa	Vīra
Uṇanas	Namuci	Mura	Vṛtra
Kamalāxa	Naraka	Yātudhana	Vṛṣaparvan
Kālanemi	Nahuṣa	Vala	Vogavat
Kirmira	Nikumbha	Vali	Çamhvarn
Keçin	Pāka	Vātapi	Çukra
Kāitava	Puloman	Vixava	Samhlāda
Jambha	Prahrāda	Vidyunmāla	Sālva
Tāraka	Maṅki	Vipracitti	Sunda
Tārakāxa	Mada	Virūpāxa	Hiraṇyakaçipu
Tālajaṁgha			

Some of these names may be sanskritic, some ab-  
 original.

---

Of the Asura's we mark separately the following  
 Classes:

## A. As Dāitya's are mentioned:

Ilvala	Vātāpi
Upasunda	Vipracitti
Tāraka	Vegavat
Triqiras	Çukra
Naraka	Sālva
Prahlāda	Sunda

## B. As Dānava's:

Kāitava	Madhu
Naraka	Maya
Prahrāda	Vivindya

But some of the Dānava's and the Dāitya's are to be found, however, as may be seen above, under the commoner name of Asura's.

Rāhu (I,1161) is the Dānava most frequently mentioned. He is also called Svarbhānu (V,3810. XII,7392), and it is said of him that he strives to devour both sun and moon.

The myth of Rāhu is connected with the story of the Churning of the Ocean, and the strife of the Deva's and the Asura's concerning the Amṛta and the Sovereignty of the world, which I quote here in the form it has in I,1108—1188:

Jvalantam acalaṁ Meruṁ  
 tejorāçim anuttamaṁ  
 āxipantaṁ prabhāṁ bhānoḥ  
 svaçrṅgāih kāñcanojjvalāih  
 Kanakābharaṇaṁ citraṁ  
 devagandharvasevitaṁ  
 aprameyam anādhṛṣyam  
 adharmabahulāir janaiḥ

Vyālāir ācaritaṁ ghorāir  
 divyāuṣadhividipitaṁ  
 nākam āvṛtya tiṣṭhantaṁ  
 ucchrayeṇa mahāgiriṁ  
 Agamyāṁ manasāpy-anyāir  
 nadivṛxasamanvitaṁ  
 nānāpatagasaṅghāiḥ ca  
 nāditaṁ sumanoḥarāḥ —  
 Tasya' ṣṛṅgam upāruhya  
 bahuratnācitaṁ ṣubhaṁ  
 anantakalpam udviddhaṁ  
 Surāḥ sarve mahāujasah  
 Te mantrayitum ārabdhās  
 tatrāsīnū divaukasah  
 Amṛtāya samaganya  
 taponiyamasamṛutah,  
 Tatra Nārāyaṇo devo  
 Brahmaṇam idam abravīt:  
 cintayatsu Sureṣv-evāṁ  
 mantrayatsu ca sarvaḥ  
 Devāir Asurasaṅghāiḥ ca  
 mathyatām kalaḥodadhīḥ,  
 bhaviṣyaty-Amṛtaṁ tatra  
 mathyamane mahodadhāu,  
 Sarvāuṣadhīḥ samāvāpya  
 sarvaratnāni cāiva ha  
 mathnadhvam udadhiṁ Devā  
 vetsyadhvam Amṛtaṁ tataḥ.  
 Tato 'bhraṇikharākārāir  
 giriṣṛṅgāir alaṅkṛtaṁ  
 Mandaraṁ parvatavaraṁ  
 latājālasamākulaṁ

nānāvihagasaṅghuṣṭam  
 nānādamṣṭrisamākulaṁ  
 kinnarāir Apsarobhiḥ ca  
 Devāir api ca sevitaṁ  
 Ekādaśasahasrāṇi  
 yojanānāṁ samucchritaṁ  
 adho bhūmeh sahasreṣu  
 tāvatsv-eva pratiṣṭhitaṁ,  
 Tam uddhartum aṣaktā vāi  
 sarve Devagaṇās tadā  
 Viṣṇum āsīṇaṁ abhyetya  
 Brahmanāṁ cēdam abruvan:  
 Bhavantav atra kurvataṁ  
 vuddhiṁ nāiḥcreyasīm paraṁ  
 Mandaroddharaṇe yatnah  
 kriyatuṁ ca hitaya nah,  
 Tathēti cābravīd Viṣṇur  
 Brahmanā saha Bhargava  
 acodayad ameyatmā  
 phaṇīndraṁ padmalocanaḥ.  
 Tato 'nantah samutthāya  
 Brahmanā paricoditah  
 Nārāyaṇeṇa cāpy-uktas  
 tasmin karmaṇi vīryavān  
 Atha parvatarājānaṁ  
 tam Ananto mahābalaḥ  
 ujjahāra balād brahmaṇ  
 savanaṁ savanāukasaṁ.  
 Tatas tena Surāḥ sārddhaṁ  
 samudram upatasthire,  
 tam ūcur Amṛtasyārthe  
 nirmathīṣyāmahe jalam.

Apām patir athôvaca:  
 mamâpy-añço bhavet tatani  
 soḍhâsmi vipulaṁ mardam  
 Mandarabhramaṇād iti.  
 Ūcuḥ ca Kūrmārājauam  
 akūpāre Surāsuraḥ:  
 adhiṣṭhānaṁ girer asya  
 bhavān bhavitum arhati.  
 Kūrmeṇa tu tathēty-uktvā  
 prṣṭham asya samarpitaṁ,  
 taṁ çailaṁ tasya prṣṭhasthaṁ  
 yantreṇ-Ēndro nyapiḍayāt.  
 Manthanaṁ Mandaraṁ kṛtvā  
 tathā netraṁ ca Vāsukiṁ  
 Devā mathitum arabdhah  
 samudraṁ nidhim ambhasaṁ,  
 Amṛtārthe purā brahmaṁs  
 tathāiv-Āsura-Danavaḥ  
 ekamantaṁ upaḥliṣṭa  
 nāgarājo mahāsuraḥ,  
 Vibudhāḥ sahitāḥ sarve  
 yataḥ pucchaṁ tataḥ sthitāḥ  
 Ananto bhagavān, devo  
 yato Nārāyaṇas tataḥ  
 çira utxipyā nāgasya  
 punaḥ punar avāxipāt.  
 Vāsuker atha nāgasya  
 sahasā xipyataḥ Surāḥ  
 sadhūmāḥ sārciṣo vātā  
 niṣpetur asakṛn mukhāt,  
 Te dhūmasaṅghāḥ sambhūtā  
 meghasaṅghāḥ savidyutah

abhyavarṣan Suragaṇan  
 ṣramasantāpakarṣitān.  
 Tasmāc ca girikūṭāgrāt  
 pracyutāḥ puṣpaviṣṭayah  
 Surāsuraṇan sarvān  
 samantāt samavākiran,  
 Bābhūvātra mahānādo  
 mahāmegharavopamah  
 udadher mathyamānasya  
 Mandareṇa Surāsuraḥ,  
 'Tatra nānūjalacarā  
 viniṣpiṣṭā mahādriṇa  
 vilayaṁ samupajagmuḥ  
 ṣataṣo lavaṇambhasi,  
 Varuṇaṇi ca bhūtāni  
 vividhāni mahādharah  
 Patālatalavāsīni  
 vilayaṁ samupanayat,  
 'Tasmiṁ ca bhrāmyamaṇe 'drūu  
 saṅghrṣyantah parasparaṁ  
 nyapatān patagopetāḥ  
 parvatāgrān mahādruṇāḥ,  
 Tesāṁ saṅgharṣajaṣ cāgnir  
 arcirbhīḥ prajvalen muhuh  
 vidyudbhīr iva nīlābhram  
 āvṛṇon Mandaraṁ giriṁ,  
 Dadāha kuṇjarāṁs tatra  
 simbhāṁṣ cāiva vinirgatān  
 vigatāsūni sarvāṇi  
 sattvāni vividhāni ca,  
 Tam Agnim Amaraṣreṣṭhah  
 pradahantam itas tatah



vāriṇā meghajen-Īndrah  
 çamayām asa sarvaçah,  
 Tato nānāvidhas tatra  
 susruvuh sāgarāmbhasi  
 mahādrumāṇāṁ niryāsa  
 bahavaç câṣadhīrasāh,  
 Teṣāṁ Amṛtavīryāṇāṁ  
 rasānaṁ payasāiva ca  
 amaratvaṁ Surā jagmuh  
 kūñcanasya ca nīravat,  
 Tatas tasya samudrasya  
 tajjātam udakaṁ payah  
 rasottamair vimiçraṁ ca  
 tatah xīrad abhūd ghṛtaṁ.  
 Tato Brahmaṇaṁ asīnau  
 deva varadam abruvan:  
 çrāntāḥ sma subhṛçam Brahman  
 nōdbhavaty-Amṛtaṁ ca tat  
 Vinā Nārāyaṇaṁ devaṁ  
 sarve 'nye Deva-Danavah  
 cirārabdham idaṁ çāpi  
 sāgarasyāpi manthanaṁ.  
 Tato Nārāyaṇaṁ devaṁ  
 Brahmā vacanam abravīt:  
 vidhatsvāsisāṁ balaṁ Viṣṇo  
 bhavān atra parāyaṇaṁ.  
 Balaṁ dadāmi sarveṣāṁ  
 karmāitad ye samāsthitāḥ  
 xobhyatām kalaçāḥ sarvāir  
 Mandarah parivartyatām.  
 Nārāyaṇavacaḥ çrutvā  
 balinas te mahodadheh

tat payah sahita bhūyaç  
 oakrire bhr̥çam ākulam.  
 Tatah çatasahasrām̐çur  
 mathyamānāt tu sāgarāt  
 prasannātmā samutpannah  
 Soma h çītām̐çur ujñvalah  
 Çrīr anantaram utpannā  
 ghṛtāt pāṇḍaravāsini  
 Surā devī samutpannā  
 Turaga h pāṇḍaras tathā  
 Kāustubhas tu manir divya  
 utpanno ghṛtasambhava h  
 marīcivikacah çrīman  
 Nārāyaṇa urogatah,  
 Çrīh Surā cāiva Somaç ca  
 Turagaç ca manojava h  
 yato devās tato yagmur  
 ādityapatham āçritā h,  
 Dhanvantaris tato devo  
 vapuṣmān udatiṣṭhata  
 çvetam̐ kamaṇḍalum̐ bibhrad  
 Amṛtam̐ yatra tiṣṭhati.  
 Etad atyadbhutam̐ dr̥ṣtvā  
 Dānavānām̐ samutthitah  
 Amṛtārthe mahān nādo  
 mamēdam̐ iti jalpatām̐,  
 Çvetāir dantāiç caturbhis tu  
 mahākāyas tatah param̐  
 Āirāvaṇo mahānāgo  
 'bhavad Vajrabhr̥tā dbṛtah,  
 Atinirmathanād eva  
 Kālakūṭas tathāparah



Viṣṇoh sakācat saṁprapya  
 sambhrame tumule sati.  
 Tatah pivatsu tat kālāṁ  
 Devesv-Amṛtam īpsitam  
 Rahur vibudharūpeṇa  
 Dānavah prāpivat tadā,  
 Tasya kaṇṭham anuprāpte  
 Dānavasyāmṛte tadā  
 ākhyātāṁ candrasūryābhyām  
 Surāṇām hitakāmyaya.  
 Tato bhagavatu tasya  
 çirah chinnaṁ alaṁkṛtāṁ  
 oakraṇyudhena cakreṇa  
 pivato 'mṛtam ojasu,  
 Tac chailaçrūga pratimāṁ  
 Dānavasya çiro mahat  
 cakracchinnaṁ khaṁ utpatya  
 nanadātibhayaṅkaram,  
 Tat kabandhaṁ papūtāsyā  
 visphurad dharanītale  
 saparvatavanadvīpāṁ  
 Daityasyākampayan mahīm.  
 Tato vāiravinirbandhah  
 kṛto Rāhumukhena vāi  
 çūçvataç candrasūryābhyām  
 grasaty-adyāpi cāiva tāu.  
 Vihaya bhagavaṁç cāpi  
 strīrūpam atulāṁ Hariḥ  
 nānāpraharaṇāir bhīmāir  
 Dānavān samakampayat.  
 Tatah pravṛttah saṁgrāmah  
 samīpe lavaṇāmbhasah

Surāṇaṃ Asuraṇāṃ ca  
 sarvaghoraṭaro mahān,  
 Prāsaḥ ca vipulās tixṇa  
 nyapatanta sahasraḥ  
 tomaraḥ ca sutixṇagrah  
 ṣastrāṇi vividhani ca,  
 Tato 'surāḥ cakrabhinnā  
 vainanto rudhiraṃ bahu  
 asiḥaktigadārugṇa  
 nipetur dharanītale,  
 Ohinnani patṭiḥṣaḥ cāiva  
 ṣiraṃsi yudhi daruṇaiḥ  
 taptakāñcanaśitāṇi  
 nipetur anīḥaṃ tala,  
 Rudhiraṇānuliṭṭaṇṇa  
 nihataḥ ca mahasuraḥ  
 adriṇaṃ iva kūṭani  
 dhaturaktāṃ ṣerata,  
 Hahakaraḥ samabhavat  
 tatra tatra sahasraḥ  
 anyonyāṃ chindatāṃ ṣastrair  
 āditye lohitaṃ,  
 Paṇighair ayasais tixṇaiḥ  
 sannīkarṣe ca muṣṭibhiḥ  
 nighnatāṃ samare 'nyonyāṃ  
 ṣabdo divaṃ ivāṣṛṇat,  
 Ohindhi bhindhi pradhāva tvam  
 pātajābbhisarēti ca  
 vyacrūyanta mahāghoraḥ  
 ṣabdās tatra samantataḥ,  
 Evaṃ sutumule yuddhe  
 vartamāne mahābhave

Naru-Nārāyaṇāu devau  
 samājagmatur ahavaṁ.  
 Tatra divyaṁ dhanur dṛṣṭvā  
 Narasya bhagavān api  
 cintayam āsa tac cakram  
 Viṣṇur Dānavasūdanam  
 Tato 'mbarāc cintitamātram āgataṁ  
 mahāprabham cakram amitratāpanam  
 vibhāvasos tulyam akunṭhamanḍalam  
 Sudarçanam saṁyati bhīmadarçanam  
 Tadāgataṁ jvalitahutaçanaprabham  
 bhayaṅkaram karikaravāhur acyutah  
 mumoca vai pravalavad ugravegavān  
 mahaprabham paranagaravadharāṇam,  
 Dahat kvaciḥ jvalana ivāvalohit prasahya  
 tan Asuragaṇan nyakṛntata  
 praveritam viyati muluh xitan  
 tatha papāu raṇe rudhiram atho Piçācavat.  
 'Tathāsurā giribhir adīnacetaso  
 muhur muluh Suragaṇamardayaṁs tada  
 mahabala vigalitameghavarcaśah  
 sahasraço gaganam abhiprapadya ha  
 Athāambarād bhayaḥjananāḥ prapedire  
 sapādapū bahuvidhamegharūpiṇah  
 mahādrayaḥ parigalitāgrasānuvah  
 parasparam drutam abhijatya sasvanāḥ  
 Tato malī pravicalitā sakānanā  
 mahādripātābhibatā samantataḥ  
 parasparam bhṛçam abhigarjatām  
 muhūraṇājire bhṛçam abhisampravartite.  
 Naras tato varakanakāgrabhūṣaṇāir  
 maheṣubhir gaganapatham samāvṛṇot

vidārayan giriçikharāṇi pātribhir  
 mahābhaye 'suragaṇavigrahe tada.  
 Tato mahīm lavaṇajalāṇ ca sagaraṁ  
 mahāsurāḥ praviviçur arditāḥ surāḥ  
 viyādgataṁ jvalitābutāçanaprabhaṁ  
 Sudarçanaṁ parikupitaṁ niçamya te.  
 Tataḥ Surāir vijayam avāpya Mandarāḥ  
 svam eva deçāṁ gamitāḥ supūjitaḥ  
 vinādyā khaṁ divam api cāiva sarvaçaḥ  
 tato gatāḥ saliladharā yathāgataḥ.  
 Tato 'mṛtaṁ sunihitam eva cakrire  
 Surāḥ paraṁ mudam abhigamya puṣkalaṁ  
 dadau ca taṁ nidhim Āmṛtasya ruxitūṁ  
 kirīṭine Balabhid athāmarāḥ saha.  
 Āmṛtamanthanāṁ samaptaṁ.

- o: Sauti said, „There is a mountain named Meru of blazing appearance, and looking like a huge heap of effulgence. The rays of the sun falling on its peaks of golden lustre are dispersed by them. Abounding with gold and of variegated tints, that mountain is the haunt of the gods and the Gandharvas. It is immeasurable, and unapproachable by men of manifold sins. Dreadful beasts of prey inhabit its breast, and it is illuminated with divine herbs of healing virtue. It standeth kissing the heavens by its height and is the first of mountains. Ordinary people cannot so much as think of ascending it. It is graced with trees and streams and resoundeth with the charming melody of winged choirs. Standing high for infinite ages, upon it once all the mighty celestials sat them down and held a conclave. They came in quest of amṛta, they who had practiced penances and observed the rules according to the ordinance. Seeing

the celestial assembly in anxious consultation, Narayana said to Brahma, 'Do thou churn the Ocean with the Suras (gods) and the Asuras. By doing so, amrita shall be obtained together with all drugs and all gems. O ye gods, churn ye the Ocean, and ye shall discover amrita.'"

Sauti said, "There is a mountain of name Mandara adorned with peaks like those of the clouds. It is the best of mountains, and is covered all over with intertwinning herbs. There no end of birds pour forth their melody, and there beasts of prey roam about. The gods, the Apsaras, and the Kinnaras visit the place. Upwards it riseth eleven thousand yojanas, and descendeth downwards as much. The gods failed to tear it up and they came to Vishnu and Brahma who were sitting, and said, 'devise ye some efficient scheme. Consider, ye gods, how Mandara may be upraised for our good.'"

Sauti continued, "And Vishnu, with Brahma, assented to it, O son of Bhrigu! And the lotus-eyed one laid the hard task on the mighty Ananta, the prince of Snakes. And the mighty Ananta, directed thereto both by Brahma and Narayana, O Brahmana, upraised that mountain with the woods thereon and with the dwellers of those woods. And the gods came to the shore of the Ocean with Ananta, and addressed the Ocean saying. 'O Ocean, we have come to churn thy waters for obtaining nectar'. And the Ocean replied, 'be it so, as I am to have a share of the nectar. I am able to bear the agitation of my waters by the mountain.' And the gods went to the king of the tortoises and said to him, 'O Tortoise-



king, thou shalt have to hold the mountain on thy back.' The tortoise-king agreed, and Indra placed the mountain on the former's back by means of instruments.

„And the gods and the Asuras made Mandara their churning staff and Vasuki the cord, and set about churning the main for amrita. The Asuras held Vasuki by the hood and the gods by the tail. And Ananta who was for Narayana, at intervals raised the Snake's hood and suddenly lowered it. And in consequence of the friction he received at the hands of the gods and the Asuras, black vapours with flames issued out of his mouth which becoming clouds charged with lightning poured down showers to refresh the tired gods. And blossoms beginning to rain on all sides of the gods from the trees on the whirling Mandara, also refreshed them.

„And, O Brahmana, out of the deep then came a tremendous roar, like unto the roar of the clouds at the universal dissolution. Various aquatic animals were crushed by the great mountain, and gave up their being in the salt-waters. And many dwellers of the lower regions and inhabitants of the world of Varuna were killed. From the revolving Mandara, large trees were torn up by the roots, and flying into the air like birds, they fell into the water. And the mutual friction of the trees produced a fire which surrounded the mountain. And the mountain looked like a mass of dark clouds charged with lightning. O Brahmana, the fire increased, and burnt the lions, elephants and other creatures that were on the mountain. And carcasses of no end of ani-

mals floated down the waters. Then Indra extinguished that fire by descending showers.

„O Brahmana, after the churning had gone on for sometime, the gums of various trees and herbs mixed with the waters of the Ocean. And the celestials attained immortality by drinking of the waters mixed with those gums vested with the properties of amrita, and with the liquid extract of gold. By degrees, the milky water of the agitated deep produced clarified butter by virtue of the gums and juices. But nectar did not rise even then. And the gods appeared before boon-granting Brahmā seated on his seat and said, 'Sir, we are spent, we have not strength left to churn further. Nectar hath not yet arisen. So that now we have no resource save Narayana.'

„Hearing them, Brahma said to Narayana, 'Lord, vouchsafe to grant the gods strength to churn afresh the deep.'

„And Narayana agreeing to grant their various prayers, said, 'O wise ones. I grant ye sufficient strength. Go, insert the mountain and churn the waters.'

„Re-equipped with strength, the gods began the churning again. After a while, the mild Moon of a thousand rays emerged from the ocean. Thereafter, Lakshmi dressed in white, and wine, the white steed, and then the celestial gem Kaustuva which graces the breast of Narayana. Lakshmi, wine, and the steed fleet as the mind, all came before the gods of high. Then arose the divine Dhanwantari himself with the white vessel of nectar in his hand. And

seeing him, the Asuras set up a loud cry, saying. 'Ye have taken all, he must be ours.'

„And at length rose the great elephant, Airavata, of huge body and with two pairs of white tusks. And him took the holder of the thunder-bolt. But the churning still went on, so that poison at last appeared, and began to overspread the earth, blazing like a flame mixed with fumes. And at the scent of the fearful Kalakuta, the three worlds were stupefied. And then Mahadeva of the Mantra form, solicited by Brahma, to save the creation swallowed the poison and held it in his throat. And it is said that the god from that time is called Nilakantha (blue-throated). Seeing all these wondrous things, the Asuras were filled with despair, and prepared to enter into hostilities with the gods for the possession of Lakshmi and nectar. Thereupon Narayana called his bewitching Maya to his aid, and assuming a ravishing female form, coquetted with the Asuras. And the Daityas, ravished with her charms, lost their reason and unanimously placed the nectar in the hands of that fair woman.“

Sauti said: „Then the Daityas and the Danavas with first class armours and various weapons pursued the gods. In the meantime the valiant Lord Vishnu accompanied by Nara took away the nectar in his hands from those mighty Danavas.

„And then all the tribes of the gods during that time of great fright drank the nectar receiving it from Vishnu. And while the gods were drinking that nectar after which they had so much hankered, a Danava named Rahu was drinking it in the guise of

a god. And when the nectar had only reached Rahu's throat, the Sun and the Moon (discovered him and) communicated the fact to the gods. And Narayana instantly cut off with his discus the well-adorned head of the Danava who was drinking the nectar without permission. And the huge head of the Danava cut off by the discus and resembling a mountain-peak then rose to the sky and began to utter dreadful cries. And the Danava's headless trunk falling upon the ground and rolling thereon made the Earth tremble with her mountains, forests, and islands. And from that time hath arisen a long-standing quarrel between Rahu's head and the Sun and the Moon. And to this day it swalloweth the Sun and the Moon, (causing the eclipses),

„And Narayana quitting his ravishing female form, and hurling many terrible weapons at them, made the Danavas tremble. And thus on the shores of the sea of salt-water, commenced the dreadful battle of the gods and the Asuras. And sharp-pointed javelins and lances and various weapons by thousands began to be discharged on all sides. And mangled with the discus and wounded with swords, saktis, and maces, the Asuras in large numbers vomited blood and lay prostrate on the earth. Cut off from the trunks with sharp double edged swords, heads adorned with bright gold fell continually on the field of battle. Their bodies drenched in gore, the great Asuras lay dead everywhere. It seemed as if red-dyed mountain peaks lay scattered all around. And when the sun rose in his splendour, thousands of warriors striking one another with their weapons,

the sounds 'Alas!' and 'O!' were heard everywhere. The warriors fighting at a distance from one another brought one another down by sharp iron missiles, and those fighting at close quarters slew one another by blows of the fist. And the air was filled with shrieks of distress. Everywhere were heard the alarming sounds, 'cut off,' 'pierce,' 'after,' 'hurl down,' 'advance.'

„And when the battle was raging fiercely, Nara and Narayana entered the field. And Narayana seeing the heavenly bow in the hand of Nara, called to his mind his own weapon—the Danava-destroying discus. And lo! the discus, Sudarshana, destroyer of enemies, like to Agni in effulgence, and dreadful in battle, came from the sky as soon as thought of. And when it came, Achyuta of fierce energy, of arms like the trunk of an elephant, hurled and hurled with great force the weapon, effulgent as flaming fire, dreadful, and of extraordinary lustre, and capable of destroying hostile towns. And that discus blazing like the fire that burneth all things at the end of time, hurled with force from the hands of Narayana, falling constantly everywhere destroyed the Daityas and the Danavas by the thousands. Sometimes it flamed like fire and consumed them all, sometimes it struck them down as it coursed through the sky; and sometimes, falling on earth, like a goblin it drank their life blood.

„And on their side, the Danavas, white as the clouds from which the rain hath been extracted, possessing great strength and bold hearts, ascended the sky and hurling down thousands of mountains con-

tinually harassed the gods. And those dreadful mountains, like masses of clouds, with their trees and flat tops, falling from the sky, collided with one another and produced a tremendous roar. And when thousands of warriors shouted without intermission on the field of battle and the mountains with the woods thereon began to fall around, the Earth with her forests trembled. Then the divine Nara coming to that dreadful conflict of the Assuras and the Ganas (the followers of Rudra), reducing to dust those rocks by means of his goldheaded arrows covered the heavens with the dust. And discomfited by the gods, and seeing the furious discus scouring the fields of heaven like a blazing flame, the mighty Danavas entered the bowels of the Earth, while others plunged into the sea of salt waters.

„And having gained the victory, the gods offering due respect to Mandara placed him on his own base. And the nectar-bearing gods making the heavens resound with their shouts, went to their own abodes, And the gods returning to the heavens rejoiced greatly, and the vessel of nectar Indra and the other gods made over to Nara, for careful keep.“ (Roy's Transl.)

From this we see that the Sun and the Moon, from kindness, revealed to the gods that Rāhu was drinking the Amṛta, and that Viṣṇu cut off Rāhu's head which flew up to heaven, whilst his body fell on the earth causing it to tremble.

According to XIII, 7293 foll. the penitential brāhmaṇa Atri saves the gods from Rāhu and the Dānava's.

The Rāhu myth is often referred to in the Mahābhārata, thus in V, 3810:

Atra madhye samudrasya  
 kabandhah pratidṛṣyate  
 Svarbhāṇoh sūryakalpasya  
 Soma-Sūryāu jighāṃsatah.

- o: Here in the midst of the ocean the body of Svarbhānu is to be seen in the shape of the sun desiring to destroy the moon and the sun.

See further VI, 4619. VII, 1668, 3767.

C. Dasyu seems to have been used about an aboriginal people, but has afterwards been degraded to the common name for a robber. Thus we read in V, 838:

Tato rājñāṃ samabhavad yuddham ota  
 tatra jātāṃ varmaśastraṃ dhanuḥ ca  
 Indrapāitad Dasyu-badhaya karma  
 utpāditāṃ varmaśastraṃ dhanuḥ ca.

- o: Then the war arose between the kings, then armour, arms and bow were invented, by Indra for the destruction of the Dasyu's the work was done: armour, arms and bow.

But in I, 1908. 3503. XII, 2952 it is used only as the name of a robber.

D. The Naga's or Serpents are also called Sarpas, so we read in I, 797:

Sa tatra Nāgāṃs tān astuvad ebhiḥ ṣlokaib:  
 Ye Āirāvatarājānah

\*Sarpāḥ samitiṣobhanāḥ — cfr. II, 900-66 and in many other places.

- o: He there praised the Nagas in these ṣloka's:  
 The Sarpas who have Āiravata for their king  
 (and) shine in battle —

Still it must be remarked that in VI.246 is written: Sarpā Nāgāṇ ca, which seems to imply that they have been understood to be two different species. They are designated beside by several other synonymous expressions as pannaga (I,2141, 2126. III,12100), uraga (I,2135), bhujaṅga (III,12386. XII,13895), ajagara (III,12890).

They dwell in the bowels of the earth (I,796. 5018. V,3530) in Nāgaloka, which is endless, aparyanta, crowded with hundreds of different kinds of palaces, houses, towers and pinnacles, anekavidhaprāsādaharmyavalabhinyāha, and strewn with wonderful large and small pleasure-grounds, uccavacakrīḍaṣṭcaryasthanavakīrṇa. The Serpent-world is likewise called Pātala (VIII,4633, cfr. V 3518) and Niraya (III,12119). Their principal town is called Bhogavatī (V.3017), where Vāsuki reigns. They also live in caves, in inaccessible mountainous regions (III,12386) and are even said to be found in the valleys. in Kuruxetra, on the banks of the river Ixumatī (I,303). in the Nuimiṣa forest on the shores of Gomatī (XII,13800), in numbers on the northern banks of the Gaṅgā (I,799), and in the Niśadha (-mountain districts) (VI,216). The most important of them is Geṣa who lies underneath the earth and supports it (cf. Viṣṇu.)

Adhastad dharanūṃ yo 'sau

sadā dhārayate nṛpa

Geṣaṇ ca pannagaṇreṣṭhah VII,3456. V,3618.

The Nāga's are thus described: They are possessed of great strength, mahāvīrya, have a big body, mahākāya, they are frightful, ghora, very quick, tarasvin, very violent, mahāvega, and they descend from Surabhī (XII,13868. I,2162). They are provided with



tusks full of poison. *daṁstra*, *viśolvana* (I, 5018), *kalana-laviṣa* (I, 5168). They are handsome, take many shapes, and wear showy earrings, *surūpa*, *bahurūpa*, *kalmāṣakundala* (I, 797, XII. 13835). They consist of several races. Of *Vāsuki*'s race some are blue, some red, and some white, dreadful, large-limbed, and possessed of strong poison (I, 2145 foll.). Some have 3, others 7, and others again 10 heads etc. (I, 2162. V, 3622).

Beside the many names of single *Nāga*'s that are repeated in I, 2142 foll. II, 360. V, 3622, the following are to be found separately named in the different books:

Aryaka	Taxaka	Vāsuki
Arvuda	Dhanañjaya	Çakravapin
Açvasena	Dhṛtarāṣṭra	Çeṣu
Karkoṭaka	Nahūṣa	Sumukha
Kalapṛṣṭha	Padmanābha	Srutasena
Okura	Muni	Svastika
Jaya	Mahajaya	

E. 'Amongst the *Asura*'s, the *Rākasa*'s are described as being perfect ogres. They are cannibals, cruel trolls who scent human flesh. They are large and strong, broad-shouldered, hideous in appearance, with flaming red eyes, red beard and hair, a mouth stretching from ear to ear. They have sharp prominent teeth, and a long tongue. Their ears are pointed as spears. They are night-wanderers, the children of darkness, unconquerable at midnight and in the gloaming and shun the light. They practise sorcery, *māyā*, and transform themselves into many different shapes. They haunt chiefly the woods, live in mountain fastnesses and

in desolate regions. They laugh and roar frightfully. They make obstacles to prevent offerings and penances, and haunt holy places (tīrtha). To show this I cite the following passages:

Tatah sa tṛṇam ādāya  
prahr̥ṣṭaḥ punar abravīt:  
anenāhaṁ haniṣyāmi  
Rāxasam puruṣādakam. I, 6302.

o: Thereupon he having taken a blade of grass  
answered joyfully:  
with this will I slay  
the cannibal Raxasa.

Te catuṣpathanixipte  
Jarā namātha Raxasī  
jagrāha manuṣyavyaghra  
mam̐saḥ opitabhojana, II, 715.

o: Those who were cast on the cross-roads  
seized then a Raxasa-woman  
by name Jarā  
who lived on flesh and blood.

Samīpe nagarasyāsya  
Vako vasati Rāxasasah  
īḥo janapadasyāsya  
purasya ca mahābalaḥ  
puṣṭo mānuṣamāmsena  
durbuddhiḥ puruṣādakah. I, 6307.

o: Near that town  
lives the Rāxasa Vaka  
reigning over that country  
and over that city, he the powerful

who lives on human flesh,  
the foolish cannibal.

Tatra teṣu ṣayāneṣu  
Hidimbo nāma Rāxasah  
avidūre vanāt tasmāc  
chālavṛxam samācṛitah  
krūro mānusa māṁsādo  
mahāvīryaparākramah  
pravṛdjaladharaṣyāmah  
piṅgaḥ dāruṇākṛtiḥ  
daṁṣtrākara lavadanah  
piṣitepsuh xudhārditah  
lambasphik lambajatharo  
raktaṣmaṣruṣirotahah  
mahavṛxagulasakandhah  
ṣaṅkukarṇo vibhīṣanah  
virūparūpah — —  
hṛṣṭo manuṣamaṁsasya  
mahākāyo mahābalah  
āghraya manuṣam gundham  
bhaginīm idam abravīt etc. I 5922. 6271, 3007.  
VII, 1975, 8004, 8150, 6862. III, 847 16187. XII, 80. II, 80,

- o: While they lay there<sup>f</sup>  
a Rāxasa by name Hidimba,  
who had taken refuge under a Qūla-tree  
not far from that wood.  
a dreadful cannibal  
of great strength and courage  
dark as a thunder cloud  
with red eyes, of a frightful appearance,  
having a mouth with prominent teeth,  
hungering after human flesh,

with red beard and hair,  
 Neck and shoulders as thick as the trunk of a tree  
 with spear-shaped ears, terrifying,  
 deformed --  
 Rejoicing over human flesh,  
 large-limbed, powerful,  
 after having scented men  
 he said this to his sister etc.

Purā samrajaṇyate prācī  
 purā sandhyā pravartate  
 rāudre muhūrte rakṣāṁsi  
 prabalāni bhavanty-uta,  
 tvarasva Bhīma mā krīḍa  
 jahi Rakṣo vibhīṣaṇam  
 pura vikurute mīṇāṁ  
 bhujayoh saram arpayā I, 302a.

o: The east is reddening, the morning twilight is about to set in. Rakshasa's become stronger by break of day. Therefore hasten, O Bhīma! Play not (with thy victim), but slay the terrible Rakshasa soon. During the two twilights Rakshasa's always put forth their powers of deception. Use all the strength of thy arms. (Roy.)

Rātrāu niṣīthe svābhīle  
 gate 'rdhasamaye nṛpa  
 pracāre puruṣādānāṁ  
 Rakṣasāṁ ghorakarmaṇāṁ  
 tad vanam tāpasā nityaṁ  
 gopāḥ ca vanacārīṇaḥ  
 dūrāt pariharanti sma  
 puruṣādabhayāt kila etc. III, 303. VII, 792a.

- o: O king, just after the dreadful hour of midnight when all nature is asleep, when man-eating Rāxasas of terrible deeds begin to wander, the ascetics and the cow-herds and other rangers of the forest used to shun the woods of Kāmyaka and fly to a distance for fear of cannibals. (Roy.)

Athāpçyat sa udaye  
 bhāskaram bhakaradyutih  
 somañ cāiva mahābhīgaṇ  
 viçamanam divākaram,  
 amāvasyām pravṛttayām  
 muhūrte rāudra eva tu  
 devasuraṇ ca saṁgramam  
 so 'pçyad udayo girau,  
 lohitaṇ ca ghanāir yuktaṁ  
 pūrvām sandhyām Ūtakratuh  
 apaçyal lohitodaṇ ca  
 bhagavān Varuṇālayam III,14267.

- o: And that god adorned with sun-like offulgence, then perceived the Sun rising on the Udaya hill, and the great Soma (Moon) gliding into the Sun. It being the time of the new Moon, he of a hundred sacrifices, at that Rāudra moment, observed the gods and Asuras fighting on the Sunrise-hill. And he saw that the morning twilight was tinged with red clouds. And he also saw that the abode of Varuṇa had become blooded. (Roy.)

Rātrāu hi Rāxasā bhūyo  
 bhavanty-amitavikramāḥ  
 balavantah sudurdharṣāḥ  
 çūrā vikrāntayodhinah VII,7982, 7983.

- o: For at night the Rāxasa's become  
immensely strong  
mighty unconquerable  
heroes, brave warriors.

Tam dṛṣṭvā mātur udarāc  
cyutam ādityavaracasam  
tad Rāxo blasmasād bhūtam  
papāta parimucya tām I, 899.

- o: And the Rāxasa perceiving the infant drop from  
the mother's womb, shining like the sun, quitted  
his grasp of the woman and fell down and was  
instantly converted into ashes. (Roy.)

Jarā namāsmi bhadram te  
Raxasī kamārūpinī II, 729. III, 367.

- o: I am Jarā by name, Hail!  
a Rāxasa-women who can assume all shapes.

Giridurgeṣu ca sadā  
degeṣu viṣameṣu ca  
vasanti Rāxasā rūdrās III, 1009.

- o: In mountain fastnesses  
and in rough regions  
live the cruel Rāxasa's.

Katham utsrjya Vāidehīm  
vane Rāxasasevite  
iti tam bhrātaram dṛṣṭvā  
prāpto 'siti vyagarhayat III, 10038.

- o: How couldst thou forsake Vāidehī  
in a forest infested by Rāxasa's  
and come here, thus did he blame his brother,  
when he saw him.

Ghoram rūpaṃ atho kṛtvā  
 Bhīmasenaṃ abhasata -- --  
 Evam uktvā tato Bhīmam  
 antardhūnaṃ gatas tada --  
 Bhīmas tu samare rājan  
 adṛṣye rūkṣe tadā  
 ākūṣaṃ pūrayāṃ āsa  
 çaraiḥ sannatapūrvabhīḥ  
 Sa badhyamāno Bhīmena  
 nimeṣād ratham āsthitaḥ  
 jagāma dharaṇiṃ cāiva  
 xudrah khaṃ sahasāgamat  
 ucca vacaṇi rūpaṇi  
 cakara subahuni ca  
 aṇur vrhat punaḥ sthūlo  
 na daṃ muṇcaṇu ivāmbudāḥ etc. VII,1075.

Vapūṃ vilumpanti hasanti Raxasāḥ  
 prakarṣamaṇaḥ kuṇapāṇy-anekaçāḥ VII,1076. III,309.

Svadham pūjaṃ ca Raxobhir  
 Janasthāne praṇāçitāṃ  
 prādān nihatya Raxaṃsi  
 pitṛdevabhya içvarah. VII,321.  
 Raxogaṇavikīrṇaṇi  
 tīrthāṇy-etāni Bhārata III,320.

o: Those holy places, o Bhārata,  
 are haunted by flocks of Rākṣasa's.

Rākṣāṃsi cāitani caranti putra  
 rūpeṇa tenādbhutadarçanena  
 atulyavīryāṇy-abhirūpavanti  
 viḡhnaṃ sadā tapasaç cintayanti  
 Surūparūpāṇi ca tāni tāta

pralobhayante vividhāir upayāih  
sukhāc ca lokāc ca nipātayanti

tāny-ugrarūpāni munīn vaneṣu etc. III,10070.

o: Those are, o son! Rakshas. They walk about in that wonderfully beautiful form. Their strength is unrivalled and their beauty great. And they always meditate obstruction to the practice of penances. And, O my boy, they assume lovely forms, and try to allure by diverse means. And those fierce beings hurled the saints, the dwellers of the woods, from blessed regions (won by their pious deeds). (Roy.)

As a kind of Rāxasa's are named (II,86) Kinnara's. Scattered about in different places of the Mahabharata we find the following names of Raxasa's:

Alamvusa	Jara	Vaka
Alayudha	Dūṣana	Vāli
Kirmira	Maya	Vibhiṣana
Kumbhakarna	Muṣa	Qumvara
Khara	Mahendra	Qūrpanakha
Ghaṭotkaca	Mārīca	Hidimba
Jaṭāsura	Rāvana	

Of these names some are perhaps aboriginal words, others perhaps are sanskritic, or sanskriticised.

F. Piṣāca's are often mentioned in combination with the Rāxasa's (VII,1975, 2104. XII,10222) and are even sometimes identified with these. They are like the Rāxasa's hideous, repellent and bloodthirsty.



I quote the following proofs:

Pivanti cāṇanti ca yatra durdṛṣāḥ  
Piçācasaṅghāḥ ca nadanti bhairavāḥ VII, 1079.  
I, 8198, 1181.

- o: Where disgusting Piçāca's drink and eat  
(out of the river of blood and corpses)  
and roar frightfully.

Aṣṭacakrasamāyuktam  
asthāya pravaram ratham  
turaṅgavaḍanāir yuktam  
Piçācāir ghoradarṇanāḥ VII, 7499. III, 16136.

- o: After having mounted the excellent  
carriage which was furnished with 8 wheels  
and harnessed (to it) Piçāca's of frightful  
appearance having horses' faces.

Tatrādṛgyanta Rāxasī  
Piçācāḥ ca pṛthagbhīḥ  
khāḍanto naramāṁsāni  
pivantaḥ ṣoṇitāni ca  
Karālāḥ piṅgalāḥ cāṇva  
ṣailadantā rajasvalāḥ etc. X, 462.

- o: There were seen several kinds  
of Rāxasa's and Piçāca's  
eating human flesh  
and drinking blood,  
They had prominent teeth and were red,  
they had teeth as hard as stone and were dirty.

—————

<sup>1</sup> We have seen from what I have stated above, that  
the Asura's and the Sura's were half-brothers, and

that the Asura's were the elder, wherefore Asura in the Rġveda means God.

In the Mahābhārata there is often mentioned a Strife between the half-brothers:

Bhrātṛṇām nāsti sāubhrātraṁ

ye 'py-ekasya pituh sutāḥ

rājyahetor vivaditāḥ

Kaṇṇapasya Surāsurāḥ XIII,<sup>556</sup>. Ofr. above.

This quarrel appears first to have arisen after they in harmony had churned the sea (I,<sup>1112</sup>, VIII,<sup>2983</sup>; cfr. Rāmāyaṇa, see „Fire Forstudier“ p. 45). For then came forth, amongst other things the Amṛta, the Drink of immortality, ambrosia, and that they both wanted. So the warfare began between the Asura's and the Sura's that became a struggle for the mastery of the three worlds (Triloka), the imperial power, a battle that lasted thousands of years and transformed the earth to an ocean of blood. Ofr. below under Sura's.

Teṣāṁ api Qri-nimittam

mahān āsīt samucchrayah,

yuddham varṣasahasrāṇi

dvātriṁṣad ābhavat kila,

Ekārṇavam mahūḥ kṛtvā

rudhireṇa pariplutam

jaghnur Dāityāṁs tathā Devās

Tridivam cābhilebbhire XII,<sup>1185</sup>.

o: Between them became for Qri's sake

great enmity

a war began which lasted

32,000 years.

After having converted the earth

to a sea of blood  
the Deva's killed the Daitya's  
and won Heaven.

Nityānuṣaktavairā hi  
bhrātaro Deva-Dānavāḥ V, 1681.  
Surāṇām Asurāṇāṃ ca  
samajāyata vāi mithah  
āiṣvaryaṃ prati saṅgharṣas  
Trailokye sacaracare I. 3187. IX, 1352. XIII, 546.

- o: Of Sura's and Asura's  
there was certainly an encounter  
between them  
to gain the sway of the three worlds  
with all its moveable and immoveable things.

It is said that assuredly were the Asura's originally just, good and charitable, know the Dharma and sacrificed, and were possessed of many other virtues (XII, 2208 foll. 2201 foll.). And therefore Qrī, the goddess of prosperity, dwelt with them during yuga's from the very beginning of the world.

Sāham evaṃ guṇesv-eva  
Dānaveṣv-avasam pura  
prajāśargam upādāya  
nāikam yugaviparyayaṃ. XII, 5381.

But afterwards as they multiplied in numbers (XII, 2206), they became proud, vain, quarrelsome and shameless, they infringed Dhamma, they neglected to sacrifice, they did not visit the holy places, tīrthās, to cleanse themselves from sin (III, 8492 foll. XII, 6145), they said they were just as good as the Deva's (XII, 6146) and envied their happiness (XII, 7611). Intoxicated with power they

tortured creatures, made confusion in everything, even challenged the Deva's, and what more is opposed themselves to the law of Brahma (XII, 6145); they even succeeded for a time in dethroning Indra and putting Vali in his place, cfr. under Indra. But as they had thus changed their nature, Qrī forsook them.

Tatah kālavyāpāra-  
teṣāṃ guṇavyāpārayāt  
apaṇyān nirgataṃ dharmaṃ  
kāmakrodhavaçātmanām XII, 8382, 8380.

- o: Thereupon in the course of time  
on account of their change of qualities  
I saw that Dharma disappeared  
from them who were animated by passion and rage.

Allusions to this disastrous war between the Asura's and the Sura's are to be found in III, 8001 foll., 13215, 14570 foll. V, 3581, 7024. VII, 4001, 1025, 5773, 7075, 7540. VIII, 3021, 1301 foll. (the sons of Tāraka). IX, 1552, 1750, 2450 foll. (Kumāra). XII, 1185 (the Brāhmaṇa's side with the Dānava's), 6115 (Rudra), 7610 foll. (Viṣṇu), 8181, 8218.

In the description of the different kinds of Asura's several like traits recur which clearly show that they all belong to one another, even if they have many different names, and in details seem to be different. And that by Asura's the Aborigenes of India have been understood, seems to be evident from several things:

1. It is said of them, for instance, that they live in mountains, forests and in the earth.
2. That the Asura's are older than the Sura's, and that the earth originally belonged to them.

3. Whilst the Asura's generally live in enmity with the Sura's (Aryan's?) i.e. they disturb the sacrificial fire (the watch-fires of the advancing Aryans?), try to take possession of the three strongholds and the Triloka, the three worlds, and a Rākṣasa carries off Bhrigu's wife, and so on.
4. Still they contract alliances with them: Arjuna espouses king Vāsuki's sister, Mātali's daughter marries the Nāga Sumukha (V, 3672), the Nāga Taxaka is an intimate friend of Indra (I, 8080), the Rākṣasa Puruloma had been betrothed to Bhrigu's wife before she had been given in marriage to Bhrigu (I, 8093), Ghaṭotkaca is a son of Bhīma and the Rākṣasa woman Hidimba. Rākṣasa's and Yaka's are even named incidentally as being in the army of the Deva's.
5. As we have seen above, the Asura's are also grouped with different Hindu tribes, and the Naga people live unto this day in Bengal and Assam in a half savage condition.
6. In the strife between the Kuruids and the Paṇḍuids some Asura's stand by the Kuruids (VII, 4119).
7. When the Asura's are often described as *bahurūpa*, have many shapes, this description is well suited to a people who lead a guerrilla war against their enemies and are sometimes in one place, sometimes in another.

While thus there can scarcely be a doubt as to the fact of the wars between the Asura's and the Sura's being originally a strife between two different tribes, still it seems as if this circumstance has been forgotten in the course of time, and the battle has become a symbol of the eternal struggle between good and bad.

---

## II. THE SURA'S.

---

The Suras (I, 284. III, 11080, 12054, 12992 etc. etc.) are also called Deva's, the shining (III, 11855. VIII, 1105. XII, 439. 1184 etc.), and Divāukāsas, inhabitants of the shining heavens (I, 2500). Sura is derived from svar and Deva from diu div, and both these verbs mean to shine. They are called Tridaśa (I, 3501. III, 8103, 8551. VII, 1166. XII, 8110. XIII, 908, 3331) in accordance with their number. the thirty, by which, no doubt, is meant the 33, trayas-trimṇā ity- ete deva I, 2601. As immortals they are called Amara (III 2137, 12077).

They move in the air, devas antarīkṣāḥ (IX, 3009) and high up above the earth do they dwell in Tridiva (XVII, 77. XII, 1181), in Svarga (cfr. Indra), and from here they descend to earth (I, 2500), where the mountain Meru (VI, 201. I, 1098) in Himālaya between Mālayavat and Gandhamādana, is their meeting place and pleasure ground (I, 1098, 1114. XII, 12026). This gold mountain is the highest of all mountains. It is round as a ball, shines like the morning sun, and is like a fire without smoke. It is 84000 yojana's high and goes as far down in depth, and it overshadows the worlds above and below and across. All birds on this mountain have golden feathers, wherefore the bird Sumukha, a son of Suparna, left the mountain (in disgust) because there was no difference between good, middling, and bad birds. The sun and the moon and Vāyu (the god of the winds) go

round this mountain. It is furnished with heavenly flowers and fruit, and covered everywhere with bright gold dwellings. Here on this mountain, hosts of Deva's, Gandharva's, Asura's and Raxasa's, play together with crowds of Apsarases. The top of Meru is covered with forests that are beautified with flowers and the wide-stretching branches of Jambu trees, and which resound with the melodious voices of kinnari'es (XIII, 1862).

The Signs, līṅgāni, which distinguish the Gods from mankind are the following: They do not sweat, their eyes do not twinkle, their feet do not touch the ground, they always wear fresh wreaths, and they have no shadow:

Yathoktaṁ cakrire devaḥ  
 samarthyam līṅgadharmāḥ  
 sâpacyad vibudhaṁ sarvaṁ  
 asvodaṁ stabdhalocanaṁ  
 hr̥ṣitasragrajoḥinaṁ  
 sthitaṁ aspr̥ṣataḥ xitiṁ III, 1861.

∴ The gods did as they had been adjured and assumed their respective attributes as best they could. And thereupon she beheld the celestials unmoistened with perspiration, with winkless eyes, and unfading garlands, unstained with dust, and staying without touching the ground. (Roy.)

According to XII, 12556 the Gods are immortalized deified human beings, some of whom are said to have attained Heaven through their good deeds:

Evaṁ Rudrāḥ sa-Vasavaḥ  
 tath-Âdityaḥ parantapa  
 Sâdhya Râjarsisaṅghāḥ ca

dharmam etam samācṛitāh  
 Apramattās tatah Svargam  
 prāptāh puṇyāih svakarmabhih XII,681, 12756.  
 o: Thus Rudra's and Vasu's  
 likewise Āditya's, o thou pursuer of enemies,  
 Sādhya's and numbers of Royal wise men,  
 who have followed this Dharma  
 without fail, have thereupon  
 attained Svarga by their good deeds.

And those who have been the greatest killers, i. e.  
 heroes, are the most esteemed (XII,139).

### THE DEEDS OF THE SURA'S.

The Churning of the Ocean and the Slaughter  
 of the Asura's.

(According to the Rāmāyaṇa).

The Sura's and the Asura's churned the milky ocean  
 jointly, in order to possess themselves of the drink of  
 immortality, Amṛta. They used the serpent-prince  
 Vāsuki with the 100 heads for the churning rope and  
 the mount Mandara as a churning stick. First came  
 forth the dreadful poison Halāhala which Ṣaṅkara  
 (Qiva) swallowed, then the well-skilled man in medicine,  
 the upright Dhanvantari with staff and crock, together  
 with the radiant Apsarases. Then the Goddess of For-  
 tune appeared Laxmī (Ṣrī) and the happy Vāruṇī  
 Varuṇa's daughter, (the grape vine), who desired union.✓  
 Diti's sons would not have her, but Aditi's sons took  
 her the blameless in marriage and were glad and joyful.  
 Thereupon came forth the finest of horses Uccāih-



çravas, and the pearl of jewels Kāustubha, and finally the immortal beverage Amṛta. But this last was the cause of a great family-destruction, for the sons of Aditi fought with the sons of Diti, and a dreadful war commenced which brought confusion into the three worlds. The sea-surrounded earth with its mountains belonged formerly to the Dāitya's, but with the help of Viṣṇu the Deva's gained the superiority and destroyed Diti's sons. And then Purandara (Indra) ruled joyfully all the world with its Rṣi's and wandering minstrels.

Thus the story reads in the Rāmāyaṇa I,<sup>45</sup>, 15—15. VII,<sup>11</sup>, 14—18 (Bombay-Edition). The way in which it is told in the Mahābh. does not quite agree with this (cfr. supra) neither is it so well rounded, see I,<sup>111</sup>. V,<sup>3012</sup>. VII,<sup>2983</sup>. XII,<sup>1185</sup>, 12992, 7513.

15. Pūrvan Kṛtayuge Rama  
Ditch putra mahabalāh  
Aditeç ca mahabhāga  
vīryavantah sadharmikāh.
16. Tatas teṣāṁ naravyaghra  
buddhir āsīn mahātmanām:  
amarā vijarūç cāiva -  
katham syāma nirāmayāh.
17. Teṣāṁ cintayatām tatra  
buddhir āsīd vipaçcitām:  
xīrodamathanam kṛtvā  
rasam prāpsyāma tatra vai.
18. Tato niçcitya mathanam  
yoktram kṛtvā ca Vāsukim  
manthānam Mandaram kṛtvā  
mamanthur amitāujasah.

19. Atha varṣasahasreṇa  
yoktrasarpaçirāṁsi ca  
vamanto 'tiviṣaṁ tatra  
dadamçur daçanāih çilāh.
20. Utpapātāgnisamkāçaṁ  
Halāhala mahaviṣaṁ,  
tena dagdhaṁ jagat sarvaṁ  
sadevāsuramānuṣaṁ.
21. Atha devā mahādevāṁ  
Çaṁkaraṁ çaraṇarthināḥ  
jagmuḥ puçupatiṁ Rudraṁ  
trāhi trāhiti tuṣṭuvuḥ.
22. Evan uktas tato devair  
devadevoçvarāḥ prabhuḥ.  
prādur aṣī, tato 'trāiva  
çaṁkhacakra dharo Hariḥ
23. Uvācāṁsmitaṁ kṛtvā  
Rudraṁ çūladharaṁ Hariḥ:  
dāivatāir mathyamāṇo tu  
yat pūrvaṁ samupasthitaṁ
24. Tat tvadīyaṁ suraçreṣṭha,  
surāṇāṁ agrato hi yat  
agrapūjāṁ iha sthitva  
grhāṇēdaṁ viṣaṁ prabho.
25. Ity-uktvā ca suraçreṣṭhas  
tatrāivāntaradhiyata  
devatānāṁ bhayaṁ drṣtvā  
çrutvā vākyaṁ tu çarṅgiṇāḥ
26. Halāhalaṁ viṣaṁ ghoraṁ  
saṁjagrahāmṛtopamaṁ  
devān viçrjya deveço  
jagama bhagavān Haraḥ.

27. 'Tato devāsuraḥ sarve  
 mamanthū Raghannandana  
 praviveçātha Pātalan  
 manthānaḥ parvatottamaḥ.
28. Tato devāḥ sagandharvas  
 tuṣṭuvur Madhusūdanaṁ:  
 tvam gaṭiḥ sarvabhūtānāṁ  
 viçeṣeṇa divāukasūṁ
29. Pālayāsmān mahābāho  
 girim uddhartum arhasi  
 iti çrutvā Hṛṣikeṣaḥ  
 kāmāthaṁ rūpam asthitāḥ.
30. Parvataṁ prṣṭhataḥ kṛtvā  
 çicye tatrōdadānu Hariḥ  
 parvatagraṁ tu lokatma  
 hastenākramya Keçavaḥ
31. Devānāṁ madhyataḥ sthitva  
 mamantha puruṣottamaḥ.  
 Atha varṣasahasreṇa  
 āyurvedamayā pumān
32. Udatiṣṭhat sudharmātmā  
 sadanḍaḥ sakamaṇḍaluh  
 aṭha Dhanvantarir nāma  
 Apsarāḥ ca suvarcasāḥ
33. Apsu nirmanthanād eva  
 rasāt tasmād varastriyaḥ  
 utpetur manujaçreṣṭha  
 tasmād apsaraso 'bhavan
34. Śaṣṭiḥ koṭyo 'bhavans tāsām  
 apsarāṇāṁ suvarcasām  
 asamkhyeyās tu Kākutṣṭha  
 yās tāsām paricārikāḥ

35. Na tāh sma pratigṛhṇanti  
sarve te devadānavāh,  
apratigrahaṇād eva  
tā vāi sādharmaṇāḥ smṛtāḥ.
36. Varuṇasya tataḥ kanyā  
Vāruṇī Raghunandana  
utpapāta mahābhāgā  
margamāṇā parigrahaṁ.
37. Diteḥ putrā na tām Rāma  
jagrahur Varuṇātmaajāṁ  
Adites tu sūtā vīra  
jagṛhus tām aninditām.
38. Asurās tena Dāiteyāḥ  
Surās tenāditeḥ sutaḥ,  
hṛṣṭāḥ pramuditaḥ cāsan  
Varuṇigrahaṇāt-Surāḥ.
39. Uccāihṣravāḥ hayaçreṣṭho  
maṇiratnaṁ ca Kāustubhaṁ  
udatiṣṭhan naraçreṣṭha  
tathāivā mṛtam uttamam.
40. Atha tasya kṛte Rāma  
mahān āsīt kulaxayah  
Adites tu tataḥ putrā  
Diti-putrān ayodhayan.
41. Ekatām agaman sarve  
Asurā Rāxasāḥ saha,  
yuddham āsīn mahāghoraṁ  
vīra Trāilokyamohanam
42. Yadā xayaṁ gataṁ sarvaṁ  
tadā Viṣṇur mahābalaḥ  
Amṛtaṁ so 'harat tūrṇam  
māyām āsthāya mohinīm

43. Ye gatābhimukhaḥ Viṣṇuḥ  
 āxaraḥ puruṣottamaḥ  
 saṁpiṣṭās te tadā yuddhe  
 Viṣṇunā prabhaviṣṇunā.
44. Aditer ātmajā vīra  
 Diteh putrān nijaghñire  
 asmin ghore mahāyuddhe  
 Dāiteyādityayor bhr̥gam.
45. Nihatya Ditiputrāṁs tu  
 rājyaṁ prāpya Purāṇḍaraḥ  
 ṣaṣṭha mudito lokān  
 sarṣisaṁghān sacāraṇān.
- o: 15. Formerly in the Kṛtayuga, o Rama.  
 Diti's sons (were) very powerful  
 and Aditi's sons very happy  
 mighty and just.
16. Then, o thou man-tiger,  
 it occurred to the high-minded:  
 how shall we become immortal  
 and without old age and sickness.
17. While they considered this  
 it occurred to the wise:  
 having churned the milky ocean  
 we shall verily obtain the juice.
18. Thereupon having decided upon the churning  
 and having made Vāsuki into a churning rope  
 and Mandara into a churning-stick  
 then did the incomparably mighty churn.
19. Then for a thousand years  
 the churnrope-serpent's heads  
 spitting here a strong poison  
 bit the rocks with their teeth.

20. Then sprang forth the fiery  
 'strong poison Hālāhala,  
 all creation was burned by that,  
 both Deva's, Asura's and men.
21. Then the Deva's taking refuge  
 with the great god Qaṅkara  
 went to the cattle king Rudra.  
 save (us), save (us), so (saying) they praised (him).
22. Thus addressed by the gods  
 the lord of the gods the mighty one  
 appeared there;  
 the conch-and-discus-holding Hari.
23. Then said to him smiling  
 to Rudra the trident-bearing (said) Hari:  
 in the sea-churning by the gods  
 that which first came forth
24. That is thine, o best of the Sura's,  
 because thou standest at the head of the Sura's,  
 please to accept as the highest worship  
 this poison, o thou mighty one.
25. And so having spoken  
 the best of Sura's disappeared there,  
 but having seen the fear of the gods  
 and having heard the words of the hornbow-owners
26. He swallowed the dreadful poison  
 as if it were Amṛta,  
 and having dismissed the gods  
 he the lord of the gods, the great Hara, went away.
27. Thereupon all the Deva's and Asura's  
 churned (again), o Raghunandana,  
 and the churning stick, the most excellent  
 of all mountains entered Hell, Pātāla.

28. 'Then the Deva's together with the Gandharva's  
praised Madhusūdana:  
thou art the refuge of all creatures  
especially of the inhabitants of heaven.
29. Save us, o thou mighty-armed,  
thou shouldst lift up the mountain,  
having heard this Hṛṣikeṣa  
transformed himself into a tortoise
30. (And) having the mountain on his back  
Hari lay there in the ocean,  
but he, the soul of the world, Keçava,  
having seized the top of the mountain with his hand,
31. Standing in the midst of the Deva's,  
churned (the ocean) he highest of beings.  
Then after a thousand years  
came the very upright man
32. Well skilled in medicine  
with staff and crook  
namely Dhanvantarī,  
and the Apsaras, the very shining,  
the bright ones,
33. Because of the churning, in the water  
out of that liquid, the excellent women  
appeared, o thou best of men,  
therefore were they (called) Apsaras.
34. Sixty koṭi's were there of those  
most shining Apsarases;  
but countless (were they), o Kākutstha,  
who were their servants.
35. All those Deva's and Dānava's  
did not take in marriage,

- therefore as they were not married  
 were they just called common (property).
36. Varuṇa's daughter, Vāruṇī,  
 thereupon, o Raghunandana,  
 appeared, she the happy  
 seeking marriage.
37. Diti's sons, o Rāma,  
 took her not Varuṇa's daughter,  
 but Aditi's sons, o hero,  
 took her the blameless one (in marriage).
38. Asura's are therefore (called) Diti's sons,  
 Sura's therefore Aditi's sons;  
 glad and happy were  
 the Sura's on account of their marriage with V.
39. Uccaiḥgravas, the first of horses,  
 and the pearl of gems Kaustubha  
 (thereupon) arose, o thou best of men,  
 likewise Amṛita, the excellent.
40. Thereupon on account of this, o Rāma.  
 there was great family-destruction,  
 for henceforth Aditi's sons  
 fought with the sons of Diti.
41. All the Asura's associated with the Rāxasa's,  
 a frightful battle took place  
 which threw the three worlds into confusion.
42. When all was destroyed  
 then Viṣṇu, the powerful  
 took the Amṛita hurriedly  
 with the aid of the confusing Māyā.
43. Those who were opposed to Viṣṇu  
 the imperishable, the most supreme of men,



they were crushed in the battle  
by Viṣṇu, the powerful.

44. Aditi's sons, the heroes,  
violently struck down Diti's sons  
in that great and dreadful battle  
between the Dāitya's and the Āditya's.
45. But having destroyed Diti's sons  
(and) having achieved the kingdom  
Purandara ruled joyfully over the world  
with its numbers of Rīṣi's and minstrels.

14. Sāubhrātram nāsti ṣūrāṇām  
ṣṇu oḍaṁ vaco mama:  
Aditiḥ ca Ditiḥ cāiva  
bhaginyāu sahite hi te
15. Bhārye paramarūpinyāu  
Kaṣyapasya prajāpateh,  
Aditir janayām āsa  
Devāms Tribhuvaneṣvarān,
16. Ditis tv-ajanayad Dāityān  
Kaṣyapasyātmāsambhavān,  
Dāityūnām kila dharmajña  
purēyam vasanārṇavavā \*
17. Sarpavatā mahi vīra,  
te 'bhavaṇ prabhaviṣṇavaḥ.  
nihatya tāms tu samare  
Viṣṇunā prabhaviṣṇunā
18. Devānām vaṇam ānītam  
Trāilokyam idam avyayam

- o: 14. Good fellowship is not to be found amongst heroes,  
and hear these my words:

- Aditi and Diti  
were both sisters
15. The extremely beautiful wives  
of Kaçyapa prapājati,  
Aditi gave birth to  
the Deva's, the Lords of the three worlds.
16. But Diti gave birth to the Dāitya's,  
Kaçyapa's sons.  
To the Dāitya's certainly belonged,  
o thou in the Dharma well versed,  
of yore the sea-washed
17. and with mountains furnished Earth,  
they were very strong  
but after having killed them in the strife,  
by the aid of the very strong Viṣṇu
18. the imperishable three worlds  
were delivered over into the power of the Deva's.
- 

The Sura's or Deva's consist, like the Asura's, of several different classes of beings, of which some may be said to be less immortal than others. I shall arrange them alphabetically.

A. Āditya's. These are 12. They were the sons of Kaçyapa prajāpati and Aditi (cfr. under Sūrya), Daxa prajāpati's daughter (XII, 7538, 7548), called Devamātar, the mother of the Deva's (IX, 2513). They are said to be the foremost of the Deva's and to be very strong, devaṇreṣṭha, mahābala (XII, 7548). In I, 2523 they are thus named:

Adityām dvādaçaḥ ditāḥ  
sambhūtā Bhuvaneçvarāḥ

ye rājan nāmatas tāmś te  
 kīrtayiṣyāmi Bhārata:  
 Dhātā Mittro 'ryamā Qakro  
 Varuṇas tv-Am̐ça eva ca  
 Bhago Vivasvān Pūṣā ca  
 Savitā daçamas tathā  
 ekādaças tathā Tvastā  
 dvādaço Viṣṇur ucyate.

In XII,<sup>7581</sup> and in XIII,<sup>7092</sup> (Jayanta) nearly the same names occur, but in XIX,<sup>11548</sup> the list appears corrupted thus:

Adityāṁ jajñire rājan  
 Ādityāḥ Kaçyapād atha:  
 Indro Viṣṇur Bhagas Tvaṣṭā  
 Varuṇo 'm̐ço 'ryamū Raviḥ  
 Pūṣā Mittraç ca varado  
 Manuh Parjanya eva ca  
 ity-ete dvādaçāḍdityā  
 varisthās Tridivāukasaḥ

ofr. Hariv. 175, 594, 11549, 12156, 12912, 13143, 11187, in I,<sup>4824</sup> thus:

Dhātāryamā ca Mitrtraç ca  
 Varuṇo 'm̐ço Bhagas tathā  
 Indro Vivasvān Pūṣaç ca  
 Tvaṣṭā ca Savitā tathā  
 Parjanyaç cāiva Viṣṇuç ca  
 Ādityā dvādaça smṛtāḥ,

Where there is one too many.

Of the twelve names of the Āditiya's Bhaga, Am̐ça, Aryaman, Mittra, Savitar, Ravi, Bhāskara, Vivasvan and Pūṣan, are, no doubt, synonymous expressions for the Sun

which in the course of time and at different periods has received different names, and Dhātār and Tvaṣṭar for Brahmā, the creator, and Jayanta, Parjanya and Indra for Ṣakra. Manu is doubtless a synonym for Brahmā.

### 1. Brahman.

#### A. Brahma (Neutrum) is

a) objectively the impersonal primeval being, from which all existence has sprung, in which it exists, and to which it returns. It is eternal, cācvara, sanātana, it subsists on itself, svayambhū, is invisible. avyakta, unhorn, aja, unchangeable, dhruva, imperishable, avyaya, axara, has neither beginning nor end, anādya.

As far as Brahma is the seed or germ from which all things have arisen, the centre, the hidden being, the deep, the essential, the primitive in everything, the string upon which the pearls are strung, it is also said to be the whole universe, the whole existence in manifold shapes, ekaanekadhā (XII, 8141).

But Brahma is without characteristics, nirliṅga, without qualities, nirguṇa, and without contrasts, nirdvandva.

Brahma is before creation, Brahma creates the fundamental elements (XII, 8511, cfr. 8775, and XII, 8522, 8189, 13787. III, 12806. XIV, 5221, cfr. Manu I, 9), in the shape of Brahmā prajāpati (Masculinum, see below) step by step the rest of creation (cfr. Fire Forst. p. 9 follow.).

But as all things have sprung from Brahma, thus all things return to him in the time of dissolution and annihilation, pralaya.

The time which passes between a dissolution and a creation is called a Brahma's day, and consists of 1000 yuga's (XII,<sup>8506</sup>. III,<sup>12832</sup>). And the time between a general dissolution and a creation is called a Brahma's night and consists likewise of a 1000 yuga's.

Brahma is named and described in XII,<sup>6775</sup>, <sup>8402</sup> under the name of Mānasa, and is sometimes also called Puruṣa.

In illustration of what I have said above I refer to the following verses:

Etad Brahma-vidam tāta  
 viditam Brahma śācavatam XII,<sup>8109</sup>. III.<sup>190</sup>.  
 ... tad avyaktam param Brahma  
 tac chācavatam anuttamam XII,<sup>8471</sup>, 11731  
 Gambhīram gahanam Brahma  
 mahat toyārṇavam yathā  
 anādinidhanam cāhur  
 axaram xaram eva ca  
 Sattveṣu līgam āviṣya  
 nirliṅgam api tat svayam  
 manyante dhruvam evānam  
 ye janās tattvadarṣinah XII <sup>8135</sup>  
 Divākaro gaṇam upalabhya nirguṇo  
 yathā bhaved apagata vaṣmimandalah  
 tathā hy-asāu munir iha nirviṣeṣavān  
 sa nirguṇam praviṣati Brahma cāvyaṇam  
 Anāgatam sukṛtavatām parām gatim  
 svayambhuvam prabhavanidhānam avyaṇam  
 sanātanam yad amṛtam avyaṇam dhruvam  
 vicārya tat param amṛtatvam açnute XII.<sup>7616</sup>  
 Anādyantam aṇam divyam  
 ajaram dhruvam avyaṇam

apratarkyam avijñeyam  
 Brahmâgre sampravartate XII,816.  
 Evañ bruvann eva tadā  
 dadarça tapasāñ nidhīm  
 tam avyayam anāupamyam  
 acintyañ çāçvatañ dhruvañ  
 Niskalañ sakalañ Brahma  
 nirguṇañ guṇagocaram etc. XIII,1019.  
 Ādyam puruṣam iñānañ  
 puruhūtañ purustutañ  
 rtam ekāxarañ Brahma  
 vyaktāvyaktañ sanātanañ  
 Asac ca sadasac cāiva  
 yad viçvañ sadasatparam  
 parāvarānāñ sraṣṭārañ  
 purāṇañ param avyayañ I,22, 30  
 Yattad ekāxarañ Brahma  
 nānārūpañ pradiçyate XII,7801.  
 Brahma tejomayañ çukrañ  
 yasya sarvañ idañ jagat  
 ekasya bhūtañ bhūtasya  
 dvayañ sthāvara jaṅgamañ  
 Aharmukhe vibuddhañ san  
 sṛjate 'vidyayā jagat XII,8610.  
 Yadā tāih pañcabhih pañca  
 yuktāni manasā saha  
 atha tad draxyate Brahma  
 mañāu sūtram ivārpitañ XII 7186. VI,1118.  
 Idañ viçvañ jagat sarvañ  
 ajayyañ cāpi sarvaçaḥ  
 mahābhūtātmakañ Brahma  
 nātaḥ paratarañ bhavet

Mahābhūtāni khaṁ vāyur  
 agnir āpas tathā ca bhūh  
 çabdah sparçaç ca rūpañ ca  
 raso gandhaç ca tadguṇāh III,13913, cfr. XII,7.  
 Vedyam sarpa param Brahma  
 nirduhkham asukhañ ca yat III,13917  
 Sarvatah pāṇipādaç ca  
 sarvato 'xiçromukhaḥ  
 sarvatah çrutimān loke  
 sarvam vyūpya sa tiṣṭhati XIV,1087.  
 Yato jagat sarvam idam prasūtam  
 jñātvātmavanto vyatīyānti yattat  
 yan mantraçabdāir akṛtaprakāçaṁ  
 tad ucyamānaṁ çṛṇu me param yat  
 rasāir vimuktaṁ vividhāiç ca gandhāir  
 açabdam asparçam arūpavañ ca  
 pañcaprakārān sasrje prajānām  
 Na strī pumān nāpi na puṁsakañ ca  
 na san na cāsat sadasac ca tan na  
 paçyanti yad Brahma-vido manuṣyās  
 tad axaram na xaratīti viddhi XII,7991.  
 Axarāt khaṁ tato vāyus  
 tato jyotis tato jalam  
 jalāt prasūtā jagatī  
 jagatyām jāyate jagat  
 Etāih çarīrāir jalam eva gatvā  
 jalāc ca tejah pavano 'ntarīxam  
 khād vāi nivartanti na bhāvīnas te  
 monaṁ ca te vāi param āpnuvanti  
 Nōṣṇam na çītam mṛdu nāpi tixnam  
 nāmlam kaṣāyam madhuram na tiktam

na çabdavan nâpî ca gandhavat tan  
 na rūpavat tat paramasvabhāvaṁ XII,7394.  
 Brahma tat paramaṁ jñānaṁ  
 amṛtaṁ jyotir axaraṁ XII,7839.  
 Sampraxālanakāle 'tikrānte  
 caturyugasahasrānte  
 avyakte sarvabhūtapralaye  
 sarvabhūtasthāvarajaṅgame  
 Jyotirdharanivāyurabite andhe  
 tamasi jalāikārṇave loka  
 āpa ity-evam Brahmabhūtaṁ etc. XII,13190.  
 Pratyāhāraṁ tu vaxyāmi  
 sarvavyadāu gate 'hani  
 yathêdāṁ kurute'dhyatmaṁ  
 susūxmaṁ viçvam içvaraṁ  
 Divi sūryas tatha sapta  
 dahanti çikhina 'rciṣah  
 sarvaṁ etat tadarcirbhūh  
 pūrṇaṁ jūjvalyate jagat  
 Pṛthivyāṁ yāni bhūtāni  
 jaṅgamāni dhruvāni ca  
 tāny-evāgre praliyante  
 bhūmitvaṁ upayānti ca  
 Tatah pralīne sarvasmin  
 sthāvare jaṅgame tathā  
 nirvṛkā nistṛṇā bhūmir  
 drçyate kūrmaprsthavat... XII,8553. III,12808 follow.  
 Evaṁ sarvāni bhūtāni  
 Brahmāiva pratisañcaraḥ  
 yathāvat kīrtitaṁ samyag  
 evaṁ etad asaṁçayaṁ.



Bodhyaṁ vidyāmayam dr̥ṣṭvā  
 yogibhiḥ paramātmabhiḥ  
 evaṁ vistārasaṅkṣepāu  
 Brahmāvyakte punah punah  
 Yugasūhasrayor ādāv  
 ahorātras tathāiva ca XII,857a.

Brahma in an objective sense is sometimes identified with Kāla on whom all things depend (XII,780) and who is again identical with Mr̥tyu, both of whom destroy and swallow up every thing as Brahma does.

This may be seen from the following passages:

... taṁ Kālaṁ iti jānīhi  
 yasya sarvaṁ idaṁ vaçe XII,8141, 8126 follow.

o: know that he (Brahma) is time  
 in whose power all this (universe) is.

Kālo 'smi lokaxayakṛt pravṛddho VI,127\*

o: I am Kāla the very mighty destroyer of the world.

Kālaṁ sarveṣāṁ akarot  
 saṁhāravinayātmakaṁ XII,4501.  
 Sarve Kālena sṛjyante  
 hriyante ca punah punah XIII,56.

o: all are created by Kāla  
 and carried away again and again.

Mr̥tyu Kālena coditah VII,5135, 5198.

Mr̥tyo saṁkalpitā me tvam  
 prajāḥ saṁhārahetunā

---

\* The ancient Hindu's have had the same impression of time's eternity as we receive from reading geological descriptions of the history of the Earth; cfr. Lubbock, The Beantes of Nature.

gaccha saṁhara sarvās tvaṁ

prajā ma ca vicāraya XII,<sup>9195</sup>.

o: O Death, thou hast been sent forth by me  
to destroy creatures  
go thou (and) destroy all  
creatures and have no scruples.

Śiva and Viṣṇu are sometimes characterized in the the same manner as Brahma, that is to say, their worshippers love to enhance their glory by giving them Brahma's qualities. Ofr. Śiva and Viṣṇu.

b) In a subjective sense Brahma is that condition of a human being, that is: its ātman, soul, through which it has (been transformed into being) the same as the impersonal, disembodied Brahma. because by penance and knowledge it frees itself from all cravings, inclinations and passions, and attains Nirvāṇa o: the extinction of all desire for existence and holding on to life, that is to say: will not be reborn. but is absorbed into the objective Brahma and becomes part of it.

( In explanation of this I cite the following verses.

Atha tatra virāgī sa

gacchati tv-atha saṁçayam

param aṣṭāyāṁ icchan sa

tam evāviçate punah

Amṛtāc cāmṛtaṁ prāptah

çāntibhūto nirātmavān

Brahmabhūtaḥ sa nirdvandvah

sukhī çānto nirāmayah

Brahmasthanam anāvarttam

ekam aṣṭāsaṁjñakam

aduhkham ajaram çāntam

sthānam tat pratipadyate XII,<sup>7323</sup>.

- 21 If, however, he goes to those regions after having freed himself from attachments, and feels a mistrust (respecting the felicity he enjoys) and wishes for That which is Supreme and Immutable, he then enters even that. In that case he attains to the ambrosia of ambrosia, to a state free from desire and destitute of separate consciousness. He becomes Brahma's self, freed from the influence of opposites, happy, tranquil, and without pain. Indeed he attains to that condition which is free from pain, which is tranquillity's self, which is called Brahma, whence there is no return, and which is styled the One and Immutable.

Yac cêdam çrāvayed vidvān

sadā parvaṇi parvaṇi

dhūtapāpmā jetaśvargo

Brahmabhūyāya kalpate XVIII,<sup>187</sup>, cfr. I.<sup>2317</sup>  
XIV,<sup>953</sup>.

- : and when a wise man recites this,  
always at one festival after another,  
then he is transformed into being Brahma  
after having shaken off sin and conquered Svarga.

Yah syād ekāyane 'līnas

tuṣṇīm kiñcid acintayan

pūrvam pūrvam parityajya

tīrṇo bandhanād bhavet

sarvamiṭṭrah sarvasaḥ

ṣame rakto jitendriyah

vyapeta bhaya manyuṣ ca

ātmavān mucyate narah

Ātmavat sarvabhūteṣu

ac caren niyataḥ ṣoḍih...

Vihāya sarvasaṅkalpān  
 buddhyā çarīramānasān  
 çanāir nirvāṇam āpnoti  
 nirindhana ivānalah  
 Sarvasaṁskāranirmukto  
 nirdvandvo niṣparigrahaḥ  
 tapasā indriyagrāmaṁ  
 yaç caren mukta eva saḥ  
 Vimuktasarvasaṁskārāis  
 tato Brahma sanātanaṁ  
 param āpnoti saṁçāntam  
 aśulaṁ nityaṁ akaram. XIV,<sup>592</sup> foll.

He who becomes absorbed in the one receptacle (of all things) freeing himself from even the thought of his own identity with all things — indeed ceasing to think of even his own existence — gradually casting off one after another, will succeed in crossing his bonds. That man who is the friend of all, who endures all, who is attached to tranquillity, who has conquered all his senses, who is divested of fear and wrath, and who is of restrained soul, succeeds, in emancipating himself. He who behaves towards all creatures as towards himself, who is restrained, pure, . . . Abandoning, with the aid of the understanding, all purposes relating to body and mind, one gradually attains to cessation of separate existence, like a fire unfed with fuel. One who is freed from all impressions, who transcends all pairs of opposites, who is destitute of all belongings, and who uses all his senses under the guidance of penances, becomes emancipated. Having

become freed from all impressions, one then attains to Brahma which is eternal and supreme, and tranquil, and stable, and enduring, and indestructible. (Roy.)

Buddhiḥ karmaguṇāir hīnā  
 yadā manasi vartate  
 tadā sampadyate Brahma,  
 tatrāiva pralayaṁ gataṁ  
 Asparśanam aṣṭvānam  
 anāsvādam adarśanam  
 aghrāṇam avitarkaṁ ca  
 sattvam praviṣate paraṁ,  
 Manasy-ākṛtayo magnā  
 manas tv-abhigataṁ matiṁ  
 matis tv-abhigatā jñānaṁ  
 jñānaṁ cābhigataṁ paraṁ,  
 Indriyāir manasaḥ siddhir  
 na buddhiṁ budhyate manah  
 na buddhir budhyate vyaktaṁ  
 sūxmaṁ tv-etāni paçyati XII, 7466.

- o: When the understanding, freed from attachment to the objects of the senses, becomes fixed in the mind, then does one succeed in attaining to Brahma, for it is there that the mind with the understanding withdrawn into it can possibly be extinguished. Brahma is not an object of touch, or of hearing, or of taste, or of sight, or of smell, or of any deductive inference from the Known. Only the understanding (when withdrawn from every thing else) can attain to it. All objects that the mind apprehends through the senses are capable of being withdrawn into the mind; the mind can be withdrawn into the understanding: the Understanding can be

withdrawn into the Soul, and the Soul into the Supreme. The senses cannot contribute to the success of the mind. The mind cannot apprehend the Understanding. The Understanding cannot apprehend the manifested Soul. The Soul, however, which is subtile, beholds them all. (Roy)

Ity-evam uktvā vacanam  
maharṣiḥ sumahātapāḥ  
pratiṣṭhata Çukah siddhiṁ  
hitvā doṣaṁ caturvidhaṁ,  
Tamo hy-aṣṭavidhaṁ hitvā  
jahāu pañcavidhaṁ rajah  
tataḥ sattvaṁ jahau dhīmaṁs  
tad adbhutam ivābhavat.  
Tatas tasmin pade nitye  
nirguṇe liṅgavarjite  
Brahmaṇi pratyatiṣṭhat śa  
vidhūmo 'gnir iva jvalan XII, 12608.

- o: Having spoken in this way, the regenerate Rishi of austere penances, viz. Çuka, stayed on his success, casting off the four kinds of faults. Casting off also the eight kinds of Tamas, he dismissed the five kinds of Rajas. Endued with great intelligence, he then cast off the attribute of Satta. All this seemed exceedingly wonderful. He then dwelt in that eternal station that is destitute of attributes freed from every indication, that is, in Brahma, blazing like a smokeless fire. (Roy.)

Yadā saṁharate kāmān kūrmo 'ngāṇīva sarvaçaḥ  
tadātmajyotir ātmāyam ātmany-eva prapaçyati  
XII, 6508.

- o: When a person succeeds in withdrawing all his desires like a tortoise withdrawing all its limbs, then his soul, which is self-luminous, succeeds in looking into itself. (Roy.)

Yadā cāyaṁ na bibhēti  
 yadā cāsmān na bibhīyati  
 yadā nēcchati na dveṣṭi  
 Brahma sampadyate tadā. (= XII, 781, 6509.)  
 Yadā na kurute bhāvaṁ  
 sarvabhūteṣu pāpakaṁ  
 karmaṇā manasā vācā  
 Brahma sampadyate tadā (= XII, 8511.)  
 na bhūto na bhaviṣyo 'sti  
 na ca dharmo 'sti kaścana. XII, 9354.

- o: When a person fears nothing and is not feared himself. when he cherishes no desire and hath no aversion for anything, he is then said to attain to Brahma. When a person does not conduct himself sinfully towards any creature in thought, word, or deed, then he is said to attain to Brahma. There is no past, no future. There is no morality or righteousness. (Roy.)

Jñānena hi yadā jantur  
 ajñānaprabhavaṁ tamah  
 vyapohati tadā Brahma  
 prakāṣati sanātanaṁ XII, 10000.

- o: When a person by knowledge disperses darkness which has its origin in ignorance. then the eternal Brahma appears.

Nānamohasamāyuktā-  
 -buddhijālena samvṛtā

asūxmadṛṣṭayo mandā  
 bhrāmyante tatra tatra ha  
 Susūxmadṛṣṭayo rājan  
 vrajanti Brahma ṣāṣv'atani XIII,191.

- o: They who give themselves up to all sorts of folly,  
 they who are ensnared in the net of ignorance,  
 they who cannot see the sublime, the dull, they run  
 here and there, (but) they who clearly see the sub-  
 lime, they go to the eternal Brahma.  
 Xamā Brahmā o: forgiveness is Brahma,  
 see Kaṣyapa's beautiful song in III,1100.

### B. Brahmā (Masculinum).

Brahmā is the personal form of the impersonal  
 Brahma which comprises all existence. As such he is the  
 first creator, adikartar o. the fashioner of all things.

Ādikartā sa bhūtānām  
 tam evāhuh Prajāpatiḥ,  
 sa vāi sṛjati bhūtāni  
 sthāvarāṇi carāṇi ca.  
 Tatah sa sṛjati Brahmā  
 devarṣipitṛmānavān  
 lokān nadīh samudrāmṇ ca  
 diṣah ṣāḷān vanaspatīn. etc. XII,8622.

- o: He is the first creator of beings  
 him they call Prajāpati  
 he surely creates beings, the firm and the moveable.  
 Thereupon that Brahmā creates  
 the Deva's, Ṛṣi's, and mankind,  
 the worlds, the rivers and the oceans,  
 the four quarters of the heavens,  
 the rocks, the trees etc.



And he is therefore also designated as Lokakṛt (I,2194), Trilokakṛt (XII,6976. XIV,521), Viṣvakṛt (I,928) and Dhātār (XII,111, 7540. I,2528), and especially often as Prajāpati, Lord of the creation:

Ahaṁ Prajāpatir Brahmā III,12797, 13586

o: I am Prajāpati Brahmā

and as Sarvalokapitāmaha, everyone's grandfather (I,901. II,436. IX,2195. XIV 521) and Lokapitāmaha (I,2074) or only Pitāmaha (XII,7604, 6115. III,11856).

When he furthermore often is called Svayambhū the self-existing (XII,7616) just like Brahma, then this title seems to point to his having from the first been looked upon as being identical with the impersonal, primordial being, see above p. 57. The same seems to be the case regarding the name Puruṣa which is also used in connection both with the personal and the impersonal Brahman. We meet therefore with different places where Brahmā is simply mixed up or confounded with Brahma, see XII,7600. III,12807 follow.

Of the creation in detail is told as follows:

Aṣṛjad brāhmaṇān evaṁ  
pūrvam Brahmā Prājāpatin  
ātmatejobhinnirvyttān  
bhāskarāgnisamaprabhān  
Tataḥ satyaṁ ca dharmāṁ ca  
tapo Brahma ca çāçvātaṁ (!)  
ācāraṁ cāiva çāucaṁ ca  
svargāya vidadhe prabhuh.  
Deva-Dānava-Gandharvā  
Dāityāsura-Mahoragāh

Yakṣa-Rākṣasa-Nāgūḥ ca  
 Piṣūṇa Manuṣya tathā  
 Brāhmaṇaḥ Xatriyā Vāiśyāḥ  
 Cūdrāḥ ca dvijasattama  
 ye cānye bhūtasamghānām  
 varṇāṁs tāṁṣ cāpi nirname. etc. XII,6980.

- o: Thus Brahmā created first  
 those brāhmaṇa's that are called Prajāpati's  
 who are distinguished by their splendour  
 inasmuch as they beam like the sun's fire.  
 Thereupon the Lord of Svarga created  
 Truth and Dharma, Penance  
 and the eternal Brahma(!)  
 and Good Behaviour and Purity etc.

Brahmā is then the first and the highest of the Prajāpati's. As these are so often spoken of I give their names here according to XII,7570, where they are mentioned as the 7 spiritual sons of Brahmā:

Marīcīr Atry-Aṅgirasān  
 Pulastyah Pulahaḥ Kratuh  
 Vāṣiṣṭhaḥ ca mahābhāgaḥ  
 sadṛṣo vai Svayambhuvā. Ofr. XII,12724.

In respect to this I remark that in XII,7534 and III,11854, Daxa is said to be the seventh, and that the same list, with the exception of Vāṣiṣṭha occurs in I,2518, 2568, and that longer lists of Prajāpati's and their descendents are to be found in II,4536. I,2519. XII,7571. XIII,4145.

Ṛṣiḥ is likewise called a son of Brahmā (XII,12722, 12705. VII,2043). When in Viṣṇuism which is without doubt the last phase of Indian mythology, it is said that

Brahmā has sprung from the Lotus that appeared in Viṣṇu's navel when he lay in yoga-worship (III,497, 15830) then this myth takes its root in the fact that Viṣṇu was identified with Brahma, but it does not harmonize with the idea of Brahmā as the creator of the world. The same will apply in reference to Īiva as having sprung out of the forehead of Viṣṇu (III,499) and not that of Brahmā.

When the gods are in distress they take refuge in Brahmā (I,225, 2491. III,8828. V,1917. XII,7613).

Above Svarga lie Brahmā's beautiful worlds. Brahmā's seat, *sadas*, is on Mahāmeru (III,11868). Of his Assembly-Hall, *sabha*, it is said in II,429.

Tatah sa Bhagavān Sūryo  
mām upādāya vīryavān  
āgacchat tām Sabhām Brāhmīm  
vipāpmā vigataklamah.  
Evaṁrūpēti sā cakṛyā  
na nirdeṣṭum narādhipa  
xaṇena hi bibharty-anyad  
anirdeṣyaṁ vapus tathā  
Na veda parimāṇaṁ vā  
saṁsthānaṁ cāpi Bhārata  
na ca rūpaṁ mayā tādṛg  
dṛṣṭapūrvam kadācana  
Susukhā sā sadā rājan  
na cītā na ca gharmadā  
na xutpipāse na glānīm  
prāpya tām prāpnuvanty-uta,  
Nānārūpāir iva kṛtā  
maṇibhih sā subhāśvarāih

stambhāir na ca dhṛtā sā tu  
 cācvaṭī na ca sū xarā  
 Divyāir nānāvidhāir bhāvair  
 bhāsadbhir amitaprabhāih  
 ati candrañ ca sūryaṇ ca  
 cikhinaṇ ca svayamprabhā  
 dīpyate nākapṛṣṭhasthā  
 bhartsayantīva bhāskaraṇ.  
 tasyām sa Bhagavān āste.

- o: And the exalted and sinless deity Surya endued with great energy, and knowing no fatigue, took me with him to the Sabhā of the Grand-sire. O it is impossible to describe that Sabhā saying, it is such, for within a moment it assumes a different form that language fails to paint. O Bharata, it is impossible to indicate its dimensions or shape. I never saw anything like it before. Ever contributing to the happiness of those within it, its atmosphere is neither cold nor warm. Hunger and thirst or any kind of uneasiness disappear as soon as one goeth thither. It seems to be made up of brilliant gems of many kinds. It doth not seem to be supported on columns. It knoweth no deterioration, being eternal. That self-effulgent mansion, by its numerous blazing celestial indications of unrivalled splendour, seems to surpass the moon, the sun, and the fire. Stationed in heaven, it blazes forth as if censuring the maker of the day. In that mansion, O king, the Supreme Deity, the Grand-sire of all created things, having himself, alone, created everything by virtue of his creative illusion, stayeth ever. (Roy.)

According to Viṣṇuism Brahmā derives his origin from the lotus that came from Viṣṇu's navel while he lay in yoga-sleep III,<sup>13559, 15321, 107.</sup>

In III,<sup>13561.</sup> XII,<sup>13723</sup> he is said to have 4 faces, caturmukha, caturvaktra, like Īiva.

His wife is called Sāvitrī (XIII,<sup>6750, 7695</sup>).

His chariot, vimāna, which is as quick as thought, is harnessed with Haṁsa's (XIII,<sup>800</sup>).

His emblem is a lotus, padma (XIII,<sup>825</sup>).

His altar, vedi, is called Samantapañcaka (IX,<sup>3008, 3085</sup>).

### The Deeds of Brahmā.

In XII,<sup>6150</sup> foll. the following is told about a great offering that Brahmā once arranged on the top of Himavat. On that occasion, it is said, a dreadful thing occurred.

Candramā vimalaṁ vyoma  
yathābhyuditatārakaṁ  
vikīryāgnīm tathābhūtaṁ  
utthitaṁ grūyate tadā  
Nīlotpalasavarṇābhaṁ  
tīkṣṇadamṣṭraṁ kṛṣṇadaraṁ  
prāñcuṁ sudurdharsataraṁ  
tathāiva hy-amitañjasaṁ,  
Tasminn utpatamāne ca  
pracacūla vasundharā  
mahormikalitāvartaḥ  
cuzubhe sa mahodadhīh.

- o: Even as the Moon (shows herself to be) after having strewn fire over the spotless heavens with rising stars, such a being is said to have appeared then

having the colour of the blue lotus having sharp teeth a small stomach being tall and difficult to withstand likewise of enormous strength, and the moment this being came into existence the earth trembled violently and the ocean rose in great waves causing maelstroms in its disturbance.

This being was called Asi and was a mighty sword that came forth to protect mankind and to destroy the enemies of the Sura's. Brahmā gave this sword to Rudra to avert misdoing. Rudra gave it to Viṣṇu, Viṣṇu to Marīci, Marīci to the great wise men (Rṣi's), these to Vāsava, and Vāsava to the Rulers of the world, these to Manu, son of the Sun, that is: to the Law.

## 2. Sūrya, the Sun.

Sūrya and Āditya are the common names for the sun. The name sūrya which means the Luminous, comes from the verb sūr, suar, svar — to shine, from which we also have svar and svarga.

Ekah Sūryah sarvam idaṁ vibhāti III,10658

o: The one sun lights all this (universe).

Kāmaṁ ca te kariṣyāmi

yan māṁ vaxyasi Bāhuka

Vidarbhūm yadi yātvādyā

Sūryaṁ darṣayitāsi me III,2827, 11867.

o: I will fulfill your wish which ever you may mention, o Bāhuka, if you will go to-day to Vidarbhā and show me the sun.

Āditya (III,11874. XIII,7638) comes according to I,2623 from Aditi who was the one of Daxa prajāpati's

daughters that married Kaçyapa prajāpati (XII,7597) and whose children are called Āditya's.

Adityāṁ dvādaç-Ādityāḥ

sambhūtā bhuvaneçvarāḥ etc. see above.

- o: From Aditi descend the 12 Āditya's,  
the rulers of the world.

Aditi as mother of the sun must doubtless be understood as a-diti, the boundless, the endless (light), cfr. Rīgveda āditeya sūria. When she is called Devamātar (IX,2515), this means: the mother of the shining (gods).

The sun was made the ruler of the flaming lights (XII,4499).

As a Person the sun appears in III,17077, where it is said:

Ājagāma tato rājams  
tvaramāṇo Divākarah  
madhupiṅgo mahābāhuh  
kambugrīvo hasann iva  
aṅgadi baddhamukūṭo  
diçah prajvālayann iva.

- o: Thereupon, o king, the Maker of the day came hastily, (he was) yellow as honey, had great arms, a neck like a tortoise shell, and he smiled, he wore bracelets, and was adorned with a diadem, and lit up all the quarters of the heavens.

His earrings Aditi had given him according to III,17118.

His wife is called in I,2599 Tvāstrī vāḍavārūpadhārīṇī, who was in the shape of a mare, and in XIII,6751 Suvarcalā, the greatly shining.

His sister Sureṇu is married to Mārtaṇḍa (Harivaṃṣa 546).

His daughter Suprajā was married to Bhānu (III.11151).

As his son is named in XII.1495 Yama with the surname Vāivasvata o: son of Vivasvat, cfr. Yama.

His car has but one wheel, and is drawn by a Nāga, see XII.13900.

Vivasvato gacchati paryayena  
voḍhum bhavāms taṁ ratham ekacakram

o: Thou goest in turn to draw  
that one-wheeled chariot of the sun

but according to VII.8681 it is drawn by 7 horses

Ekacakram ratham tasya  
taṁ ūhuh suciram hayāḥ  
ekacakram ivārkaśya  
ratham sapta hayā yathā

o: His one-wheeled chariot, the shining one,  
drew the horses, like the 7 horses (draw)  
the sun's one-wheeled chariot.

His charioteer is Aruṇa. Aruṇa is the name of the god of the Dawn, it means according to its derivation the red one, because the word is related to aruṣa, red.

Aruṇa and Garuḍa were Kaśyapa's sons by Vinatā, Daxa prajāpati's daughter (I.2520). Aruṇa was the elder and Garuḍa the younger, as it appears from the following tale (I.1073).

Daxa prajāpati had two beautiful daughters, Kadru and Vinatā. They became the wives of Kaśyapa, and he granted each (I.2520) of them a present. Kadru



chose 1000 sons in the form of serpents all equal in splendour, but Vinatā chose only two, that were to surpass Kadru's sons in splendour and strength. After a long time Kadru bore 1000 eggs and Vinatā 2. Five hundred years after this Kadru's sons came out of the eggs, but Vinatā's twins did not appear. Covered with shame Vinatā broke one of the eggs and saw a son whose one part was full grown, but whose other part was incomplete. In anger the son cursed his mother in the following words: Inasmuch as I am made incomplete by you, shall you become a slave, but if you live 5 thousand years without jealousy then shall you be freed from slavery, and if you will have your son to become famous you must till then guard him well. With these words he rose in the air and as Aruṇa he always sits at the front of the sun's chariot as charioteer (VII,7900). But Garuḍa was born at the appointed time. He has the serpents for food. As soon as he was born he forsook his mother and soared up into the air. He lives not only on serpents, but also on the leavings of others.

Aruṇa is called Kaṣyapa's wise son in I,1271.

Kaṣyapasya suto dhīmān

Aruṇēty-abhiviçrūtaḥ

and the sun's charioteer who stands on the chariot in front of the sun, has a big body and great effulgence, and prevents the sun from burning up the world in his anger. In VII,8458 he is said to steal the splendour of the moon.

Garuḍa and Suparṇa are the most common names for the King of the Birds, paxirāj (III,10571).

Garuḍa and Suparṇa are perhaps expressions for the rapidity and strength of the light and the lightning.

Garuḍa means probably the same as garutmat, the winged one, from garut, a wing, for in V, 3830 Garuḍa is plainly addressed as Garutmat:

Garutman bhujagendrare  
Suparṇa Vinatātmaja

Suparṇa means one who has handsome feathers or wings, from su and parṇa (V, 3675, 5280. I, 1502, 1518).

Garuḍa is, as explained above, Aruṇa's younger brother, Aruṇānuja (V, 3851), and is called, like Aruṇa, a son of Vinatā and Kaśyapa, Vinatāsūnu, Vāinateya, (I, 1501. V, 3587, 3851) and Kaśyapeya (I, 1147).

According to V. 3587 Garuḍa has 6 sons: viz Sumukha, Sunāman, Sunetra, Suvarcas, Suruc and Suvala, and from them descend all Vinatā's kindred of serpent-eating birds who worship Viṣṇu as their great protector. About Sumukha see above p. 43.

Garuḍa lives south of Niṣadha in the land of Hiraṇmaya by the river Hiraṇvatī (VI, 290).

He is pictured as being immensely big and strong and like Agni in splendour (I, 1212, 1245) and with eyes red as the clear lightning (I, 1241). With the wind caused by his wings he is able to stop the (rotation of the) three worlds (V, 3674. VIII, 3428). His haste and violence is so great that he seems to drag the earth itself with its waters, mountains and forests after him (V, 3857. VII, 1606. I, 1523). But once when he boasted of his strength Viṣṇu punished him for his arrogance by laying the whole weight of his right arm upon him (V, 3674). How for an instant he loses his wings as a punishment for his bad thoughts is told in V, 3878. How he is offended at being denied his lawful food the serpent Sumukha, is related in the same place.

From the time of creation the serpents are by the creator, dhātār, intended for Garuḍa's eating (V, 3677. I, 1093), therefore he is called the Serpent-eater, pannagācaka (II, 946. V, 3855), the serpent-destroyer, nāgaxayakara (I, 1217).

Garuḍa is portrayed on Viṣṇu's banner (XIII, 6820, 3686. I, 1510. V, 3701), cfr. Viṣṇu.

As to Garuḍa's Deeds we must mention, that at his birth he broke the egg without his mother's assistance, and immediately swung himself up into the air (I, 1299). His great achievement of stealing Amṛta from the Gods, is told in I, 1320—1515.

Amongst the 108 Names of the Sun (III, 116, mark the hymn to the sun III, 166) some signify his function of giving light, viz.

Arka, from arc, radiate, shine.  
 Tamisra-hjan, killing darkness.  
 Tamo-nuda, dispelling darkness.  
 Divā-kara, making light.  
 Dīptāṁṣu, having shining rays.  
 Prabhā-kara, making light.  
 Bhānu, from bhā, to shine.  
 Bhās-kara, making light.  
 Vibhāvasu. from bhā, to shine.  
 Vivasvat, from vas. to shine.  
 Sahasrāṁṣu, having a thousand rays.  
 Sūrya, from sūr, to shine.

And as such he is therefore called the Eye of the World:

Tvaṁ Bhāno jagataḥ caxus III, 166.

Ruler of all shining bodies, *īcām ... tejasām Bhāskarañ cakre XII,1199. IX,3816.*

And with his heat he calls forth and sustains all living things. Therefore he is also called: Father of all beings (III,115 follow. XIII,1620), and when he rises on the horizon, then all turn with a prayer towards him (VII,8150. III,11647, 164).

The following names belong doubtless to this side of his nature:

Aryaman	Pūṣan
Jivana	Bhaga
Dhātār	Savitar
Pāvaka	

In XIII,1681 Āditya is said to be the Entrance to the Roads (Kingdom) of the Deva's:

*Ayam sa Devayānānām  
Ādityo dvāram ucyate.*

And according to XII,11037 the whole world will shrivel or dry up at the moment of Dissolution.

Both phases of the nature of this deity we find in the Rigveda, expressed in the names of Sūrya and Savitar.

### 3. Indra.

Indra is the head of the Sura's (Deva's):

*Surānām pravara (III,10666)  
Devānām asmi Vāsavaḥ (VI,1226).*

According to XII,611. VI,240 he obtained Indraship through surpassing all the other gods by his sacrifices; in XII,3662 he is said, on the contrary, to have become

Devādhīpa after killing a number of Dāitya's and Dānava's, cfr. III.13216. He was called Mahendra, the Great Indra, after he had conquered and killed Vṛtra, as remarked in V.1362 (cfr. XII.133).

Indro Vṛtravadhenāiva  
 Mahendrah samapadyata  
 mähendram pragraham lebhe  
 lokānāñ cēçvaro 'bhavat.

Further he is named Devendra, Devānām deva, Devarāja, Sarvadeveça and Çakra. These seem to be the more frequently occurring names for this god. Regarding his many other names see below.

The Etymology of the word Indra is uncertain. The grammarian Vopadeva specifies, to be sure, a root *id* in the sense of equipping with great power, but this is perhaps only a grammatical root, as it is not to be found in literature. It is more probable that the word Indra originally has been Indura from *indu*, a drop, as it is sometimes in Rigveda to be read in three syllables, and as Indra is so often associated with rain and is designated as he who sends rain, f.i. I.1135. III.3991, 19217, 670. VI.434. I.1286, 2122. XII.8424.

na vavarṣa Sahasrāxas XIV.2257. I.3061.

yadi dvādaça varṣāni

na varṣisyati Vāsavaḥ XIV.2861. I.3091.

This feature of his nature has later been detached and made an independent deity under the name of Parjanya, see below.

The word Çakra comes from *çak*, to be strong, and signifies the Mighty.

Indra's wife, Indrāṇī (I,7351 III,1851), Mahendrāṇī (III,1672) is called Çaoī (III,1851. XIII,8750) which is derived from the same root as Çakra. and therefore also means the Mighty. In IX,8783 it is related how Bhāradvāja's daughter, the beautiful Çrutāvati, submitted herself to great penances, in order to become the wife of Indra.

His beautiful and always victorious elephant who stands at the entrance to Svarga, is called Āirāvata (III,1676, 1753, 11321) or Āirāvāṇa (XII,8221), and has 4 tusks. It resembles the mountain Kailāsa.

His horse Uccāihçravas (I,1091, 1190, 1223, 1227. VIII,243) came forth under the churning of the ocean, and is white with a black tail.

His chariot, ratha, is spoken of without name in III,1714. See follow. It is drawn by 10,000 (XIII,173 by 1000 white) reddish yellow horses (III,1720) as speedy as the wind. It scatters the dark clouds as it cleaves the sky and fills all quarters of the heavens with a din like the crash of thunderclouds. Swords, spears and clubs. flashing lightning and thunderbolts as well as most frightful serpents are on the chariot. When Arjuna began to think of it, it appeared at once.

Erect on his chariot stands his flagstaff, Vāijayanta, decorated with gold, bright dark blue and straight as a bamboo (III,1721).

His charioteer, sārathi, minister, mantrin, and friend, sakhi (III,1732. V,3641) is Mātali, who is Indra's equal in bravery. Mātali's wife is called Sudharmā (V,3519) and his daughter Guṇakeçī was famous for her beauty. When Mātali sought a bridegroom for her (V,3511) he found none suitable, neither among

Gods, Dāitya's, Gandharva's, Men or Rṣi's. He therefore, in the night, consulted his wife, and determined at last to make a journey to the world of the Nāga's, as he said to himself: possibly there may be found there a suitable husband for her. On the way there he met Nārada, and after they both had got leave of Varuṇa to visit the Nāga-world, they began to wander about in that world and at last found the beautiful Sumukha who then became the husband of Guṇakeçī (V, 3672).

The weapons of Indra are as follows:

The thunderbolt, vajra, which Tvāṣṭar made from the bones of the Rṣi Dadhica (Agastya). It surpasses all other weapons, for with that he cleaves mountains and with that he struck off Vṛtra's head (V, 4799).

The bow Vijaya (V, 5254).

The trumpet, ṣaṅkha, by name Devadatta (III, 12076).

His kingdom or world, Indraloka, Ākraloka (XIII, 7111) is called Svar, Svargati, Svarloka, Div and Devaloka ०: the world of light and the shining gods (III, 15112, 7038, 1708, 1749. I, 268. VIII, 1100). Svarga is most likely originally an adjective implying marga, road, therefore the road leading to Svarga, cfr. III, 11168.

Devalokasya margo 'yam,

agamyo mānusāḥ sadā

०: This is the way to Devaloka

which can never be trodden by man.

The entrance to Svarga is called Svargadvāra (III, 7099), and at the gate stands Āirāvata (III, 1753).

From the Himavat-mountains which are the most excellent in the world (XIII, 1407) and which are extolled

as divine, holy and loved by the gods who seek these regions, they using them as pleasure-grounds (III, 1195, 111606); from these mountains of which Meru is the centre (see „Fire Forstudier“ p. 48) you ascend through the air to Svarga (III.1727, 1711. 12092, 15112) From Mandara in this mountain-range Arjuna ascended to Indra's heaven conveyed there by Mātali in Indra's chariot, after he had first sung this beautiful hymn to the mountain: (III.1735)

Sādhūnām puṇyaçilānām  
munīnām puṇyakarmanām  
tvām sadā saṁçrayaḥ caula  
svargamārga bhikṣāṁṣām,  
Tvatprasadaḥ sadā çaila  
brahmaṇaḥ xatrya viçala  
svargam praptaç caranti sma  
devāḥ saha gatavyathah.  
Adirāja mahāçaila  
munisaṁçraya tīrthavan  
gacchāmy-amantrayitvā tvām  
sukham asmy-uṣitaḥ tvayi,  
Tava sāmūni kuñjāç ca  
nadyaḥ prasravaṇāni ca  
tīrthāni ca supuṇyāni  
mayā dṛṣṭāny-anekaçāḥ,  
Phalāni ca sugandhīni  
bhaxitāni tatas tataḥ  
susugandhāç ca vāryoghās  
tvaccharīravinihṛtāḥ  
Amṛtāsvādaniyā me  
pītāḥ prasravaṇodakāḥ,  
çiçur yathā pitur aṅke



susukham vartate naga  
 Tathā tavāñke lalitam  
 çāilarāja mayā prabho  
 apsarogaṇasañkirṇe  
 brahmāghoṣānunādite,  
 Sukham asmy-uṣitah çāila  
 tava sānuṣu nityadā.

o: O mountain, thou art ever the refuge of holy, heaven-seeking Munis of virtuous conduct and behaviour. It is through thy grace, O mountain, that Brāhmanas and Kshatriyas and Vaiçyas attain heaven, and their anxieties gone, sport with the celestials! O king of mountains, O mountain, thou art the asylum of Munis, and thou holdest on thy breast numerous sacred shrines! Happily have I dwelt on thy heights! I leave thee now, bidding thee farewell! Oft have I seen thy table-lands and bowers, thy springs and brooks, and the sacred shrines on thy breast! I have also eaten the savoury fruits growing on thee, and have slaked my thirst with draughts of perfumed water oozing from thy body! I have also drunk the water of thy springs, sweet as Amrita itself. O mountain, as a child sleepeth happily on the lap of his father, so have I, O king of mountains, O exalted one, sported on thy breast echoing with the notes of Apsaras and the chaunting of the Vedas! O mountain, every day have I lived happily on thy table-lands! (Roy.)

What he then sees in the various heavenly regions is related in III, 1715 follow.

The grove in Svarga is called Nandana (III, 1757. 12036, 15419).

Indra's city is called Amaravatī (III,1737). It has 1000 gates and an extent of 100 yojana's (I,3593). It is adorned with precious stones and yields all seasons' fruit. The sun does not scorch there, and neither heat nor cold nor fatigue torments people. Neither grief nor despondency nor weakness rules, nor anger nor covetousness. All are content (III,12036).

His assembly-hall, sabhā, is called Puskaramālinī (II,310). It is built by Çakra himself and can move at its own pleasure in any direction. It is 150 yojana's in length, 100 in breadth and 5 in height. It drives away the weakness of old age, fatigue and fear. Full of rooms and seats and ornamented with heavenly trees it is extremely beautiful. Here sits Çakra with his wife Çacī. He has a crown on his head, and a white screen is held over him (II,233. III,1772).

If you ask, who comes to Indra, there is particularly mentioned 3 classes of mankind: those who sacrifice, those who do penance, and those who behave like heroes in battle (II,198. III,1718, 1769. IX,3086. XI,41). In XIII,6032 all those are named who go to Svarga, svargagāminas.

Indra's special names. Beside the common names Indra and Çakra which seem to express the dignity and power of the god as the highest amongst the gods, we find in the Mahābhārata several other names that have a similar meaning. To these must be reckoned:

Tridaçādhīpa	Vajradhara	Vajrin
Tridivasya ekarāja	Vajrapāṇi	Surendra
Trāilokyapati	Vajrasya bhartar	Sureçvara
Marutvat	Vajrabhrt	

Whereas:

Sahasrāxi<sup>1</sup>, Sahasranetra and Vāsava

seem to refer to the light-world, the foundation for the whole Indra-myth.

Maghavan and Çatakratu, no doubt, belong to one another and refer to Indra having obtained his Indraship through sacrificing.

The other names express Indra's war with evil hostile powers, partly in a general way, but also especially as regards certain Asura's:

Dāitya-Dūnava-han, -sūdana.	Namucer hantar
Purandara	Pakaçāsana
Surārihan	Prahlādahan
—	Vala-Vṛtra-han
Balanūçana	Çahvara-Paka-han
Balahan.	

### The Deeds of Indra.

We have seen above that the Asura's and the Sura's were half-brothers, that they quarrelled about the Amṛta, and that this strife lasted for thousands of years. The Sura's with Indra at their head conquered at last by the help of Viṣṇu (III, 479) and Indra became Lord of the three worlds. Now commenced a happy time which is in III, 13216 described thus: \

---

<sup>1</sup> While it is related in I, 1705 that Indra got 1000 big red eyes on his back, sides and in front when he, fascinated by Tilottamā's beauty, gazed on her as she walked round him and the other gods, it says on the contrary in XIII, 3822 that Gāutama had cursed Indra, because he could not control his passions, and had therefore caused 1000 sexual marks to appear on his body, which however he afterwards, from pity, permitted to disappear.

When that horrible conflict between the Gods and the Asuras was over, Indra became the ruler of the three worlds. The clouds showered rain copiously. And the dwellers of the world had abundance of harvests, and were excellent in disposition. And devoted to virtue, they always practised morality and enjoyed peace. And all persons, devoted to the duties of their respective orders, were perfectly happy and cheerful. And the slayer of Vala, beholding all the creatures of the world happy and cheerful, became himself filled with joy. And he of a hundred sacrifices, the chief of the gods, seated on the back of his elephant Āirāvata, surveyed his happy subjects. And he cast his eyes on delightful asylums of Rishis, on various auspicious rivers, towns full of prosperity, and villages and rural regions in the enjoyment of plenty. And he also cast his eyes upon kings devoted to the practice of virtue and well-skilled in ruling their subjects. And he also looked upon tanks and reservoirs and wells and lakes and smaller lakes all full of water and adored by best of Brāhmaṇas in the observance, besides, of various excellent vows. (Roy.)

Çrī came and dwelt with Indra (XII, 8419). But prosperity made him arrogant. He abused his power and was guilty of heavy crimes (V, 374). While he at an earlier period had shewn himself deserving by the invention of arms with which to chastise the Asuras (V, 638) and by killing these both in numbers (XII, 3060. III, 12042 follow., 11908. II, 911) as well as individually, further by freeing Tārakā, Vrihaspati's wife (II, 230. VII, 2094) and Puloma's daughter (X, 599), he, on the other hand, seduced Ahalyā (V, 373. XIII, 3327), and de-

sired Ruci, Devaçarman's wife (XIII.<sup>2309</sup>). He killed Namuci although he had formed a friendship with him (IX.<sup>2485</sup>), and even was guilty of murdering the Brāhmaṇa Viçvarupa Triçiras. This last event is related in V.<sup>228</sup>, and abridged it reads thus:

Viçvarūpa Triçiras. Tvaṣṭar's threeheaded son practised penance in a high degree. Indra was afraid he would deprive him of his position, he therefore sent a lovely Apsaras to tempt him, but as this did not succeed, Indra slew him with his thunderbolt, and commanded a woodcutter to chop off his head. When Tvaṣṭar heard what had happened, his eyes reddened with rage, and he said: since Indra has killed my son who has done no harm but constantly been engaged in doing penance; I will create Vṛitra, and he created Vṛitra and commanded him to kill Indra. There now followed a long war between Vṛitra and Indra (cfr. XII.<sup>10101</sup>, <sup>13211</sup>. XIV.<sup>298</sup>). References to this struggle are to be found in many places (see III.<sup>1008</sup>. VII.<sup>2992</sup>. VIII.<sup>2798</sup>). The gods have recourse to Viṣṇu who advises them to make peace, but Vṛitra will not consent to a reconciliation unless they promise him invulnerability against dry or wet, stone or wood, sword or javelin, by day and by night. Peace was made on these terms and both Vṛitra and Indra were satisfied. But it was nevertheless Indra's secret and constant wish to kill Vṛitra. So meeting him once on the sea-shore, he said to himself: now it is neither day nor night, now he can be killed by me, and seeing at the same time a quantity of froth on the sea, he said to himself: this is neither dry nor wet, neither is it a weapon; and he took the froth and cast it towards Vṛitra together with

the thunderbolt which Viṣṇu had entered, and thus did he kill Vṛitra. But shortly afterwards he became depressed in spirits and downhearted when he reflected on his own duplicity and the Brāhmaṇa-murder he had committed. He flew to the farthest corners of the earth, where he lived hidden in the stalk' of a lotus in a lake. Then the earth became desolate, for it had no king. The forest withered. The rivers ceased to flow, and the animals perished for want of rain. Then gods and ṛṣis went to Nahuṣa and persuaded him to be king, But when N. had been crowned a king he also abandoned himself to sensual pleasures. And seeing one day the ravishing Çacī, Indra's wife, he desired her. Çacī asked Vṛhaspati to protect her. And Vṛhaspati said: thou shalt not be afraid, Indra will soon come back. But Nahuṣa defended his conduct and said: Indra violated Ahalyā. why did you not prevent that? Vṛhaspati then advised Çacī to ask for delay in satisfying his importunity. Çacī went and asked for postponement, „for no one knows what has become of Indra“, she said, and she succeeded in getting postponement. In the meantime the gods sought the advice of Viṣṇu, who said: let Indra perform a sacrifice of horses to me, then he will regain his position. And an offering of horses was accomplished, which freed Indra from his fear. His hiding place was discovered. Çacī besought him to return and kill the villain Nahuṣa. Then, when Nahuṣa, at the request of Çacī, to show his greatness and power caused ṛṣis to be harnessed to his chariot, and even set his foot on the holy Agastya's head," then his hour had come. By the help of the gods Indra came back and was again crowned king of the gods, while Nahuṣa was

cast down from heaven and thereafter for 10,000 years was compelled to wander about the world in the shape of a monster serpent.

The Namuci-myth (IX,<sup>3143</sup>) agrees in its principal features with the story of Vṛitra.

There are also many references to this myth in the Mahābhārata. Thus in II,<sup>1067</sup>. III,<sup>11004</sup>. VI,<sup>3078</sup>. VIII,<sup>1530</sup>.

Nahuṣa, see p. 90 under Vṛtra.

Prahrāda, see XII,<sup>4568</sup>. 8021.

Vali, see XII,<sup>3218</sup>. VII,<sup>4081</sup>.

Sarvakāmadughā, Indra's wishing cow.

Surabhi or Suravi, the divine, beautiful and gentle cow, mother of all cows, gavām mātā, daughter of Daxa prajāpati (I,<sup>8027</sup>. III,<sup>14186</sup>. XII,<sup>6132</sup>. XIII,<sup>7638</sup>, 5906). She lives in Rasātala, the 7<sup>th</sup> layer under the earth (V,<sup>3002</sup>), gives a milk in which is the strength of all the best things on earth, and becomes Svadhā, Sudha and Amṛta for those that live on these drinks (V,<sup>3611</sup>). In XIII,<sup>3718</sup> it is said of Surabhi:

Sāsrjat sāurabheyīs tu

Surabhir lokamātrkāḥ

o: But she, Surabhi, created daughters

who became the mothers of the world.

According to V,<sup>3609</sup> four of her daughters are called: Surūpā, Hamsikā, Subhadra and Sarvakāmadughā, who each bear separately the east, the south, the west and the north corners of the heavens. In I,<sup>2611</sup> Surabhi is said to have had two other daughters named Rohiṇī the happy, and the distinguished Gandharvī.

It is related in III.<sup>330</sup> foll. that Surabhi weeps because her sickly son is tormented by the ploughman with the goad.

As a reward for her great penitential exercises on mount Kāilāsa Brahmā bestowed immortality on her and a dwelling in Go-loka above Triloka, the three worlds. (XIII.<sup>3803</sup> foll.)

Surabhi's daughter by Kaçyapa is called Sarvakāmadughā or only Kāmadughā (VI.<sup>1332</sup>) or Kāmaduh, she who grants all wishes (I.<sup>3927</sup>) also Nandinī, the fascinating. She is the best of all wishing-cows. She is fat and gives abundance of sweet milk, and the mortal who drinks her milk will be for a thousand years like a strong youth. She has a beautiful neck and lovely hoofs, and she is furnished with all virtues. Varuṇa: Varuṇa's son Vaçiṣṭha obtained her as offering cow, homadhonu, but she was once stolen by Dyo (Dyāus) and as a punishment for his crime Dyo had to dwell for a long time on the Earth, in the world of mortals. According to III.<sup>2121</sup> Kāmadughā is Indra's wishingcow.

Parjanya. In order to arrive at a proper understanding of the fact that in India we meet with a distinct deity for the rainfall, we must first consider what is recorded not only from former times but up to the present day, both of the rain's power and violence and of its utility and blessing for the soil, when the land has been parched by the burning heat of the sun for three whole months.

The hot season begins in April and lasts till about the 20 June, by the end of that time man, animals, and vegetation languish. Concerning this read Kālidāsa's



masterly description of Griṣma and Varsha in his *Ritusamhāra* and among modern authors Acland<sup>1</sup>) and others. At last when the heat is most powerful, dark clouds show themselves on the horizon, then there comes a few refreshing drops and finally the thunder clouds burst with furious and violent crashes raging with immense might. It seldom lasts more than one or two hours, but what a scene of destruction is to be seen here when it is over: uprooted trees and houses levelled with the ground. The hot season is followed by a rainy season in which the swollen rivers wash the trees from

<sup>1</sup> *Manners and Customs of India* p. 17, 60, 50: there is something very grand, though awful in these furious tempest-bursts within the tropics. A few minutes back not a leaf rustled, now the trees are waving to and fro etc. In the night my wife was tossed out of bed. We were in the greatest danger of being drowned. Towards morning, however, the wind abated. The heat was excessive: not a breath of wind stirred the air. Pag. 122: How little is known in England of what a thunderstorm is! At this minute (about ten o'clock in the evening) the rain is pouring down in vast sheets of water rather than in drops. For the last two hours the lightning has not ceased for a minute at a time, whilst the thunder has continued incessantly, varied occasionally by a tremendous crash which bursts immediately above the house and shakes it to its very foundation. Add to this the roaring of the sea and the howling of the wind . . . at this station most of the European houses are blown down once in two or three years . . . I find that the depth of water which fell in the two hours and a half that the storm continued was one inch and a half, a quantity which in England, I believe, would not fall without many days of rain.

All small houses have been carried away by the flood and rain, and many people are houseless. This was in the neighbourhood of the great river Ganges. The water increased so much that only the tops of the trees were to be seen above the water. — We have 7 $\frac{1}{4}$  inch to day. We are astonished at the great number of trees fallen. There is not a spot where the storm has not done great damage. Santhal Posten for November 1900.

the banks and carry them away with them on their violent course. In the Mahābhārata there are many references to these heavy storms and floods of rain.

Tatah kadācit tasyātha  
 vanasthasya samantatah  
 Pātayann iva vṛxūṁś tān  
 sumahān vātasambhramah,  
 moghasaṅkulam ākāṣaṁ  
 vidyunmaṇḍalamāṇḍitaṁ,  
 Sañchannas tu muhūrtena  
 nāusūrtḥāir iva sāgarah,  
 vāridhārāsamūhous  
 sanpravṛṣṭah Çatakratuh  
 xauṇa pūrayām āsa  
 salilena vasundharām,  
 tato dhārākule kule  
 sambhraman naṣṭacetanaḥ  
 çītārtas tad vanam sarvam  
 ākulenāntarātmanā  
 nāiva nimnam sthalaṁ vāpi  
 so 'vindata vihaṅgaḥ,  
 pūrīto hi jalāugbena  
 tasya mārgo, vanasya tu  
 paxiṇo varṣavegena  
 hatu līnas tadābhavan,  
 mṛgasimhavarāḥ ca  
 thalam āçritya çerate,  
 mahatā vātavarṣena  
 trāsītās te vanāukasah  
 bhayārtāç ca xudhārtāç ca  
 babhramuh sahitā vane. XII.5477.

- ७: Once while he was in the forest a violent whirlwind arose which nearly overthrew the trees on all sides. The atmosphere which was full of clouds, was ornamented by a circle of lightning. It was for an instant just like a sea covered with ships and caravans. Ātakraṭu who had begun to rain with a quantity of raindrops filled in an instant the earth with water. Thereupon, at that time, when everything was overfilled with water, running about all over the wood, distraught, suffering from cold, with bewildered senses that birdcatcher found neither lowland nor continent (where he might dwell), for his way was filled with water-courses. And the birds of the forest killed by the fury of the rain or dying, and deer, lions and boars, sought the mainland and lay down to rest frightened by the heavy storm and rain, and tortured by fear and hunger, they wandered about, all together in the wood.

Te samāsādyā Kāunteyam  
 āvṛṇvañ charavṛṣṭibhih  
 parvatam vāridhārābhih  
 prāvṛṣṭīva balāhakah. VII, 6235, 6247.

- ७: They attacked Kuntī's son and covered him with a rain of arrows as the clouds in the rainy season (deluge) the mountain with floods of rain.

Parjanya denotes originally only the rain-cloud, for in this signification it is very often used as neuter, thus for instance in II, 1621:

Apramatto sthito nityam  
 prajāh pāhi viçāmpate

parjanyaṃ iva bhūtāni  
mahādṛumam iva dvijāh.

- o: Be always indefatigable,  
protect beings, o Prince.  
as the rain-cloud (benefits) the creatures  
as the birds (seek shelter) in the large tree.

But later the rain-cloud was personified, and  
Parjanya used in the sense of the Raingod, f. i.

Tatah sāyakavarṣeṇa  
Parjanya iva vṛṣṭimān  
parān avakīrat Pārthah  
parvatān iva nīradah. VII, 8153.

- o: Thereupon Pārtha overwhelmed the enemy with a  
rain of arrows, even as Parjanya followed by rain,  
(and) as the cloud (deluges) the mountains.

Prthivīm lāṅgalenêha  
bhittvā vījam vapaty-uta  
āste 'yaṃ karṣakah tuṣṇīm,  
Parjanyas tatra kīraṇam, III, 1248  
vṛṣṭiḥ cen nānuḡṛhṇīyād  
anenās tatra karṣakah. III, 1248.

- o: After having broken the earth with the plough-share  
the ploughman sows the seed, (thereupon) he sits  
in silence, the reason is that he waits for Parjanya,  
if the rain does not favour him, it is not his fault.

Of Parjanya it is said:

Samyag varṣati Parjanyaḥ  
ṣaṣasampada uttamāḥ III, 13217, 10016. VII, 8153.

- o: Parjanya rained plentifully (and forwarded) the  
richest harvest.

In the list of Āditya's in XIX,<sup>11718</sup> and I,<sup>4821</sup><sup>1)</sup> Harivaṃṣa 18118 and in other places Parjanya is noted as an independent god equal to Indra.

But that Parjanya is originally identical with Indra seems to appear from XIV.<sup>2056-59</sup>, where it is said:

Tathā ty-anekāir munibhir  
mahantah kratavah kṛtāh  
evamvidhe tv-Agastyasya  
vartamāne tathādhvane  
Na vavarṣa Sahasrāxas,  
tadā Bharatasattama  
tatah karmāntare rājann  
Agastyasya mahātmanah  
kathēyam abhinirvṛtā  
muninām bhāvitātmanām:  
Agastyo yajamāno 'sāu  
dadāty-annam vimatsarah  
na ca varṣati Parjanyaḥ  
katham annam bhaviṣyati.

- o: For thus great sacrifices were made, but when such an offering was likewise undertaken by Agastya, Indra did not rain. Thereupon during the sacrificial act this conversation took place between the holy monks: this A. who offers a sacrifice, gives food generously, still Parjanya raineth not, how then can there be food.

The absence of rain, as we well know, causes the great and constantly recurring famine in India even now.

---

<sup>1)</sup> In the last place P. is the 18<sup>th</sup>, although in the same place it is said that there are 12 Āditya's.

## 4. Varuṇa.

Varuṇa from var, to surround. means in all probability originally the heavenly sea of light which surrounds all things; Varuṇa is especially to be understood as referring to the light of the night, whilst Mittra, with whom Varuṇa is often combined, means the light of day. Such expressions as puttro Aditer and sitaprabhas may thus be explained.

Tato vāidūryavarṇabho  
bhūsayan sarvato diṇah  
yādogaṇavṛtah ḡrīmān  
ājagama Jaleçvarah III, 1868.

- o: Therupon having the lazur stone's shining blue colour and surrounded by a host of aquatic animals, lighting up the heavens on all sides, the glorious lord of the waters appeared.

Puttro 'diter mahābhāgo  
Varuṇo vāi sitaprabhah IX, 2811.

- o: Aditi's son, the happy, Varuṇa with the white radiance.

And when Varuṇa and Mittra are combined, they seem to denote the highest radiance and glory.

bhrātus puttrān pradāsyāmi  
Mittra-Varuṇayos samān I, 4260. XIII, 7666.  
III, 8797.

- o: I will give my brother children who resemble Mittra and Varuṇa.

But in the Mahābhārata Varuṇa appears only as the God of the ocean, lakes and water courses under the following names: Apāmpati (V, 3527. IX, 7423), Jaleçvara (XIII, 7245. VII, 8194), Jalādhipa (XIII, 7262),

Vāripa (XIII,7239), Udakapati (V,3531), Nadīpati (IX,2785), sarvāsām saritām pati (IX,2781), Yādāsām bhartr̥ (III,1670). As Lord of the waters he also rules over the Asura's. (XII,1189.) And according to IX,2783 he was unanimously appointed by the gods to this supremacy at the beginning of the Kṛtayuga.

His realm lies in the west (XIII,4866) and is rich and happy.

Pasyôdakapateh sthānam

sarvato bhadram rddhimat V,3531.

and the ocean is his dwelling, sāgaro Varuṇālayo (V,5603. I,1210. IX,2781). In III,1207 follow. I,1207 follow. the ocean is described with its contents: nāga's, monsters, amṛta, vaḍava, precious stones etc. In XII, the saltiness of the sea is explained. In V,3563 (cfr. 3539) there is mention of an egg deposited in the sea from which at the end of the world flames will burst forth and burn up the whole of the three worlds, triloka.

His city, pura, (XIII,7245) the most beautiful in the world, shines with many palaces, with Apsaras'es and divine pleasures.

His palace, bhavana, is entirely of gold (V,3535), and there he has a sunshade, chattra, from which cooling waters drip (V,3541).

Varuṇa has (II,353 follow.) an incomparably resplendent assembly-hall, sabhā, with walls and gates. It was built by Viṣvakarman in the midst of the waters, and it is furnished with divine trees which consist of pearls and produce fruit and flowers of all colours. Bushes with lovely singing birds are there to be found. In this hall Varuṇa sits with his wife, surrounded by Nāga's, Dāitya's, Dānava's and many other beings.

In III.<sup>1691</sup> Varuṇa is described as being dark blue like the cloud, jaladharacāyāma.

His wife's name is Siddhi (XII.<sup>11995</sup>) or Gāurī<sup>1</sup> (XIII.<sup>6751, 7687</sup>) or Vāruṇī<sup>2</sup> (II.<sup>358</sup>).

His son, Puṣkara (V.<sup>3533</sup>, is married to Soma's daughter Jyotsnākālī, and the connection between Varuṇa and Soma is in IX.<sup>2785</sup> expressed thus:

Samudro 'yaṁ tava vaçe  
bhaviṣyati nadīpatih,  
Somena sārḍhaṁ ca tava  
hānivrddhī bhaviṣyatah.

o: This sea, lord of the rivers, will submit to thee,  
and as well as for Soma will there also for thee be  
flow and ebb.

His minister, mantrin, is called Sunābha (II.<sup>380</sup>).

Like Yama, Varuṇa has a noose, he is pāçavat, (VI.<sup>3136</sup>), dharmapāçadhara (II.<sup>369</sup>). See further XII.<sup>8801, 8828, 3551</sup>. III.<sup>1693</sup>.

And he has a trumpet. çāṅkha, which Viçvakarman skilfully had fashioned from a thousand goldcoins (II.<sup>1923</sup>).

### The Deeds of Varuṇa.

Soma deemed the brāhmaṇa Utathya to be a suitable husband for his exceedingly beautiful daughter, and in the course of time Soma's father Atri, invited Utathya to his house, and presented him with the girl. But

<sup>1</sup> The wife of Çiva is also called Gāurī.

<sup>2</sup> Roy understands Vāruṇī here as the queen of Varuṇa. But according to Rāmāyana I.<sup>46, 50</sup> (Bombay Edition) Varuṇī is Varuṇasya kanyā, Varuṇa's daughter.



it became known that the handsome Varuṇa had long desired her and coming one fine day to the forest where Utathya lived he stole her after she had gone into the water to bathe, and he brought her home to his own palace and amused himself with her there. But when Utathya heard of this he said to Nārada: go to Varuṇa and say that he <sup>must</sup> give me back my wife. Nārada went, but Varuṇa refused to comply with his request. Then Utathya became inflamed with rage, and on the strength of the number of his sacrifices, he drank up all the waters (cfr. Agastya III, 8797). Then Varuṇa became faint-hearted and his relatives and friends likewise. Still he would not restore the wife of Utathya. Then Utathya commanded the Earth: let there be land where before there were 800,000 lakes, and the earth became arid there. And to the rivers he said: o river disappear in the desert. When thus the region had become waste, Varuṇa took at last Utathya's wife with him and delivered her to Nārada. And when Utathya received his wife he was again happy, and released the world and Varuṇa from their grief (XIII, 7240 follow.).

### 5. Viṣṇu.

If we abide by the elder part of the myth of Viṣṇu, and as far as possible leave all that respecting Kṛṣṇa out of the question, the latter clearly showing itself to be a newer addition or retouching of the subject, we shall find that, after Viṣṇu the names Nārāyaṇa and Hari are those which most frequently occur in the Mahābhārata. When he sometimes is also called Devadeva, the God of the gods, this is only an appellation through which his worshippers wish to increase

his reputation. Respecting his many other names see below.

He is one of the Āditya's. In V,<sub>3503</sub> we read:

Ādityānām hi sarveśām  
Viṣṇur ekah sanātanah  
ajayaç cāvyaça cāiva  
çāçvatah prabhur içvarah.

- o: For of all the Āditya's Viṣṇu alone is enduring, unconquerable and imperishable, the everlasting and mighty lord.

And he was the youngest of them (I,<sub>2800</sub>). In Rīg-veda Viṣṇu is often mentioned together with Indra, and in the Mahābhārata V,<sub>8759</sub>, III,<sub>489</sub> he is called Vāsava's (Indra's) younger brother Vāsavāvaraja.

His dwelling is on the top of Mount Mandara (V,<sub>280</sub>, cfr. I,<sub>1112</sub> and the churning of the ocean) to the east of Meru (III,<sub>11860</sub>) and to the north of Milk-Sea (VI,<sub>800</sub>).

Brahmaṇah sadanād ūrdhvaṁ  
tad Viṣṇoh paramaṁ padaṁ  
çuddhaṁ sanātanam jyotiḥ

Parambrahmēti yaṁ viduḥ (III,<sub>1548</sub>, cfr. XI,<sub>858</sub>).

- o: Higher than Brahmā's seat is that Viṣṇu's highest place, the pure, the everlasting light which they call Parambrahma.

Na tatra vipra gacchanti  
puruṣā viṣayātmakāḥ  
dambhalobhamahākrodha-  
mohadrohair abhidrutāḥ,  
nirmamā nirahaṅkāra  
nirdvandvāḥ saṁyatendriyāḥ

dhyānayogaparīṣ caiva

tatra gacchanti mānavūḥ (III,15189).

a: There they who are ensnared by sensual things come not (neither) they who are governed by deceit, covetousness, anger, stupidity and violence. But thither go they who are unselfish, without egotism, without doubt, with controlled senses, they who are absorbed in contemplation and devotion.

Even Brahmarṣi's and Maharṣi's come not there, but only Yati's, that is to say, such as have mastered their passions (III,11861-63).

His person. He has Lotus eyes, padmalocana (I,1117). According to III,13033. XIII,6961, 6961 he has four arms, he is caturbhujā. On his breast he has a mark, çrīvatsa (III,1006) therefore he is called çrīvatsa-vaxas (III,7018) salaxanoraska (MBh. Calc. vol. 3 p. 883 at the top) and çrīvatsāṅka (I,2507. VI,2999. XIII,6908). He received this mark, when the great sage Bhara-dvājā threw water on him because he disturbed him while at prayer. On his breast he wears the divine jewel Kāustubha (I,1147. VI,2998) which came forth from the churning of the ocean (see above). A lotus sprang from his navel when he lay in contemplation, and in that Brahmā with the four faces (III,15320) appeared. Therefore Viṣṇu is often called Padmanābha, having a lotus navel (I,1218, 2508. VI,2998. XIII,6970, 6988. According to Kālidāsa's Meghadūta 57 he has a blue foot. His raiment is yellow, pītavāsas (I,2508).

His couch or bed is the serpent Çeṣa or Ananta (I,1118), who holds the earth at Brahmā's command

(I,1581), and on which Viṣṇu rests in Yoga-sleep (III,13537. XII,13511); cfr. *infra*.

He has a golden chariot with 8 wheels, which is as quick as thought:

Xīrodasya samudrasya  
Tathāivôttarataḥ prabhuh  
Harir vasati Vaikuṇṭhah  
çakate kanakāmāye.  
Aṣṭacakram hi tad yānam  
bhūtayuktam manojavam  
agniva'rṇam etc. (VI,900).

o: And to the north of the Milky ocean dwells the lord Hari Vāikuṇṭha on a chariot of gold, eight wheels has his chariot, it is harnessed with demons, it is quick as thought and has the colour of fire.

His sign or standard is the bird Garuḍa (XIII,6020. I,1510); cfr. *supra*.

Viṣṇu's weapons are: first a çāṅkha, a war trumpet, cfr. VII,9021, then a cakra, a discus called Sudarçana (I,1178. 1186) and further a gadā a club (VI,2936. XIII,506), and he is therefore called çāṅkhacakra-gadādhara; cakreṇa nihatā Dāityāḥ, with the cakra the Dāitya's are killed (I,1177. 1186. XIII,6015). Besides these he carries a bow called Çārṅga (VI,2937), after which he is named Çārṅgadhanurdhara (VI,2937). When Nārāyaṇa astra is spoken of in VII,9018. 9209 etc. and Vāiṣṇava astra in VII,1272, Viṣṇu's bow is probably meant.

Viṣṇu's wife is Laxmī who came forth during the churning of the ocean (I,1146). She is also called Qrī,

and is the Goddess of Fortune and Beauty. In XII,<sup>8155</sup> is said: They call me Bhūti, Laxmī, Ārī, thus also in <sup>8354</sup>; likewise Padmā in <sup>8355</sup>, wise men call her Duḥsahā, difficult to bear. In XIII,<sup>507</sup> follow people with whom Ārī dwells are spoken of

Nāiva devo na gandharvo  
nāsuro na ca rāxasah  
yo mām eko visahitum  
çaktah kaçcit purandara (XII,<sup>8164</sup>).

o: Neither is there any god whatsoever, or gandharva to be found, or asura, or rāxasa, not one who is able to bear me, o Purandara.

In XIII,<sup>8861</sup> it says:

Adhruvā capalā ca tvam  
sāmānyā bahubhih saha.

o: Inconstant and capricious art thou and associatest with many.

According to XII,<sup>2262</sup> a lotus sprang from Viṣṇu's forehead, and out of that came Ārī who became one of the wives of Dharma o: Yama (I,<sup>2579</sup>).

Observe a conversation between Ārī and Çakra in XII,<sup>8885</sup> follow.

Viṣṇu's names. Viṣṇu has like Çiva many names. In XIII,<sup>6889</sup> we read:

Jagatprabhum Devadevam  
anantaṁ puruṣottamaṁ  
stuvan nāmasahasreṇa  
puruṣaḥ satatotthitah . . . bhavet.

o: To praise with a thousand names the Ruler of the world, the God of gods the infinite highest being one must always be ready.

And in XIII,<sup>6919</sup> follow. his thousand names are enumerated. An Indian explanation of some of these we have in V,<sup>2560</sup> follow. XII,<sup>18131</sup>, but that we cannot rely upon it, may be seen at once from the interpretation that is given of the word Viṣṇu which is derived from the root *viḥ*, to grow, from which we have *vṛhat*, great. It is said there namely:

Vṛhatvād Viṣṇur ucyate

o: on account of his greatness he is called Viṣṇu.

An equally fantastic explanation of the predicate *sanātana* is to be found in XII,<sup>7630</sup>. Monier Williams translates the word Viṣṇu by all pervading, as he thinks it comes from *viṣ* or *viç*, to pervade. Grassmann is of the same opinion. Lassen, on the contrary, solves it *vi-snu* from *vi*, *lueri*.

Whether all these names may be classed under certain definite headings, I cannot say, I will leave it to others to make the attempt. But it appears to me, that when it already is the case with most of the god-forms in the Rigveda that they melt into one another and are destitute of any defined and limited character, then this must still more be the case regarding a divinity like Viṣṇu to whom a thousand names are ascribed. For if the names are to be *nāmāni gāuṇāni* (XIII,<sup>8948</sup>) that is to say, containing definite qualities, and the names are numberless, it is easily seen that the god-forms evaporate through the multiplicity of the names. Most of these, therefore, do not mean any real quality appertaining to the said god, but are merely bestowed upon him to increase his reputation. His followers have wished to prove his greatness by ascribing to him a

number of names, but 'have demonstrated too much and therefore proved nothing.

We must here in addition remark that Viṣṇu in the eyes of his worshippers assumes the character of Brahma, in the same way as Śiva does in the eyes of his followers. See XII<sup>10070</sup> follow. VI,<sup>1216</sup> follow.

I can only discover two more prominent phases of Viṣṇu's character, viz. his yoga, devotion, and his power of salvation.

Yoga means union and is derived from yuj (yujī) = the latin jungere, but it is difficult to find a corresponding expression for it when used in a religious sense about the amalgamation, fusion and oneness with the divinity which takes place during contemplation, devotion and resignation. The definition given in Pātāñjalāṁ Yogasūtram is as follows: *yogaḥ cittavṛttinirodhas*, i. e. suppression of the working of thought. B. & R. and Mitra translate it thus: yoga is the suppression of the functions of the thinking principle.

There are not a few places in the Mahābhārata where Yoga is treated of and Viṣṇu in connection with yoga. Thus in III.<sup>17130</sup>. XII,<sup>7129</sup>, <sup>8769</sup>, <sup>5661</sup>. <sup>10210</sup>, <sup>12168</sup> <sup>13613</sup> etc. In III.<sup>18556</sup> it says:

Ekārṇave tathā loke  
 naṣṭe sthāvarajaṅgame  
 pranaṣṭeṣu ca bhūtesu  
 sarveṣu Bharatarṣabha  
 Prabhavaṁ lokakartāraṁ  
 Viṣṇuṁ çāçvatam avyayaṁ  
 yam āhur munayah siddhāh  
 sarvaloka-maheçvaraṁ

Susvāpa Bhagavān Viṣṇur  
 apsu yogata eva sah  
 nāgasya bhoge mahati  
 Ćeṣasyāmitatejasah,  
 Lokakartā mahābhāga  
 Bhagavān acyuto Hariḥ  
 nāgabhogena mahatā  
 parirabhya mahīm imām,  
 Svapatas tasya devasya  
 Padmaṁ sūryasamaprabhām  
 nābhyām vinihsṛtaṁ divyaṁ,  
 tatrotpannah pitāmahah  
 Sāxāl lokagurur Brahmā  
 padme sūryasamaprabhe  
 caturvedaḥ caturmūrtis  
 tathāiva ca caturmukhah.

- o: When thus the world had become one ocean and all fixed and moveable things had been destroyed, and all beings had perished, then that great Viṣṇu slept on the water, he whom the blessed Muni's call the beginning, the creator of the world, the everlasting, imperishable Viṣṇu, the whole world's great lord, sunk in yoga (resting) on the serpent's, the glorious Ćeṣa's coil, the exalted Viṣṇu slept, the creator of the world, the sublime Hari lay motionless, encircling this world with his great serpent coil. While the god slept a divine lotus sprang from his navel, this lotus shone like the sun, and in this sunlike lotus rose at once (the world's) grand-father and master Brahmā with the 4 Veda's, and having four shapes and 4 faces.



He is therefore called Yogin (VI,2993. XII,11067, 7636), Mahāyogin (XII,7630, 13540) and Yogamāya (XIII,6823).

His upholding and salvation power shows itself in his incarnations (embodiments). In XII,13666 it says:

Jātā hīyaṁ vasumatī  
 bhārākrūntā tapasvinī,  
 Bahavo balinah prṥhyām  
 Dāitya-Dānava-Rāxasāḥ  
 bhaviṣyanti, tapoyuktā  
 varān prāpsyanti cōttamān,  
 Avaṣyaṁ eva tāih sarvāir  
 varadānena darpitāih  
 bādhitavyāḥ suraganā  
 ṛṣayaḥ ca tapodhanah,  
 Tatra nyāyyam idam kartum  
 bhārāvatarāṇaṁ mayā  
 atha nānāsamudbhūtāir  
 vasudhāyaṁ yathākramaṁ;  
 Nigraheṇa ca pūpānām  
 sādhuṇām pragraheṇa ca  
 iyaṁ tapasvinī satyā  
 dhārayisyati medinī,  
 Mayā hy-eṣā hi dhriyati  
 pātālasthena bhoginā,  
 mayā dhṛtā dhārayati  
 jagad viṣvaṁ carācaram,  
 Tasmāt prṥhyāḥ paritrāṇaṁ  
 kariṣve sambhavaṁ gataḥ,  
 evaṁ sañcintayitvā tu  
 Bhagavan Madhusūdanah

Rūpāny-anekāny-asṛjat  
 prādurbhāve bhavāya sah  
 vārāhaṁ nārasimhaṁ ca  
 vāmanam mānuṣyam tathā.

- o: This earth has been overwhelmed by burdens and is suffering, many and strong will the Dāitya's, Dānava's and Rāxasa's become on the earth, and applying themselves to penances they will receive very great rewards; by all these, who will be proud of that giving of gifts, it will be a matter of course that crowds of Sura's should be suppressed, and likewise sages rich in penitence; it is therefore only right that I should remove these burdens through and by the help of different beings who shall come into existence upon earth in succession; both by restraining the bad and by protecting the good shall this suffering and honest earth endure; by me in the shape of a serpent from the infernal regions shall it be upheld, and it (again) will support all creation, movable and immovable, therefore will I enter into existence and save the world; thinking thus the high Madhusūdana created some forms for the purpose of revealing himself, such as a boar, a man-lion, a dwarf and a man.

I have only found one place which seems to confirm the current tradition of Brahmā as Creator, of Viṣṇu as Upholder and of Śiva as Destroyer, viz. III,<sup>15324</sup>, which reads as follows:

Sṛjati Brahmamūrtis tu,  
 raxate pāuruṣi tanuh.

Rāudrībhāvena ṣamayet,  
tisro 'vasthāh Prajāpateh.

- c. In the form of Brahmā he creates,  
in the form of Puruṣa he preserves  
in the form of Rudra he destroys  
(these are) Prajāpati's three functions.

Of Viṣṇu's Avatāra's (descents) i. e. incarnations (embodiments) which in Sanskrit literature occur in different numbers, we mention the following treated of in the Mahābhārata.

1. As a Dwarf, vāmana, or Viṣṇu's three strides. In III,<sup>1589</sup> we read the following story<sup>1</sup>):

Evam nihatya Bhagavān  
Dāityendraṁ ripughātinam  
bhūyo 'nyah puṇḍarikākṣaḥ  
prabhur lokahitāya ca  
Kaṣyapasyātmajah ṣrīmān  
Adityā garbhadhārtaḥ,  
pūrṇe varṣasahasre tu  
prasūtā garbham uttamam,  
Durdināmbhodasadr̥ṣo  
dīptāxo Vāmanākṛtiḥ  
daṇḍī kamaṇḍaludharah  
ṣrīvatsorasi bhūṣitaḥ,  
Jāti yajñopavīti ca  
Bhagavān bālarūpadhr̥k,  
yajñavātaṁ gataḥ ṣrīmān  
Dānavendrasya vāi tadā

---

<sup>1</sup> The germs of this and the following incarnation are already to be found in the Rigveda, see Macdonell in the Journal of the R. A. Soc. 1895 p. 165.

Vṛhaspati-sahūyo 'sāu  
 praviṣṭo Valino makhe,  
 taṁ dr̥ṣṭvā Vāmanatanuṁ  
 prahr̥ṣṭo Valir abravīt:  
 Pṛṣṭo 'smi dar̥ṣane vipra,  
 brūhi tvaṁ kiṁ dadāni te;  
 evam uktas tu Valina  
 Vāmanah pratyuvāca ha,  
 Svastīty-uktvā Valiṁ devah  
 smayanāno 'bhyabhāṣata:  
 medinīṁ Dānavapate  
 dehi me vikramatrayaṁ.  
 Valir dadāu prasannatma  
 viprāyūmitatejase,  
 tato divyadbhutatamaṁ  
 rūpaṁ vikramato Hareḥ  
 Vikramaṁ tribhir axobhyo  
 jalarāṣu sa medinīṁ  
 dadāu Ṣaṅkṛāya ca mahīṁ  
 Viṣṇur devah sanātanaḥ,  
 Eṣa te Vāmano nāma  
 pradurbhāvah prakīrtitaḥ.

- o: Having thus slain the enemy-killer, the chief of the Dāitya's, the lotus-eyed lord, happily for the world, was again conceived as Kaṣyapa's beautiful son in Aditi's womb, but when a thousand years had passed away she bore the most supreme foster who was like the cloud on a rainy day, had shining eyes, was in the shape of a dwarf, bore staff and a jar, and whose breast was ornamented with the çrivatsa-mark, he had matted hair, and was of the height of a boy, he carried a sacrificial cord.

The glorious one went straight to the Dānava's place of sacrifice, accompanied by Vṛhaspati he stepped into the midst of the sacrificial congregation, seeing him in the shape of a dwarf Vali said glad: I am pleased to see thee Brāhmaṇa, what shall I give thee? Spoken to thus by Vali the dwarf answered, and after having said all hail, the god turned smilingly to Vali and said: o Dānava-prince, give me 3 feet of ground. Vali gladly gave the incomparable Brāhmaṇa (what he asked for). Thereupon at the same time Hari displaying his divine and most marvellous form firmly took the whole earth in 3 hasty strides, and the eternal Viṣṇu gave it to Çakra (Indra). This is the famous revelation, called the Dwarf's, that has been told thee.

This story is referred to in V.296 where it says:

Ūcuç ca sarvadeveçam  
Viṣṇum Vṛtrabhayārditah  
trayo lokās tvayā krāntūs  
tribir vikramaṇāih purā,

and in III,15601:

Devānām mānuṣānām ca  
sarvabhūtasukhāvahah,  
tribhir vikramaṇair deva  
trayo lokās tvayā hṛtāh.

He is therefore also named Trivikrama (XIII.6892, 7742).

2. As a Boar, varāha. In III,15826 we read as follows:

Jalena samanuprāpte  
sarvatah prthivītale

tadā cāikarpave tasminn  
 ekākāṣe prabhuḥ caran  
 Niṣāyām iva khadyotah  
 prāvṛtkāle samantatah  
 pratiṣṭhānāya pṛthivīm  
 mārgamāṇas tadābhavat,  
 Jale nimagnām gām dṛṣṭvā  
 cōddharitum manasēcchati  
 kin nu rūpam ahaṁ kṛtvā  
 salilād uddhare mahīm  
 Evaṁ sañcintya manasā  
 dṛṣṭvā divyena cakṣuṣā  
 jalakrīḍābhīrucitaṁ  
 varāhaṁ rūpam asmarat,  
 Kṛtvā varāhavapuṣaṁ  
 vāṇmayam vedasanmitam  
 daṣayojanavistīrnam  
 āyataṁ ṣatayojanam  
 Mahāparvatavarṣmābhaṁ  
 tīkṣṇadamstraṁ pradīptimat  
 mahāmeghāughanirghoṣam  
 nilajīmūtasannibhaṁ  
 Bhūtvā yajñavarāho vāi  
 apah samprāviṣat prabhuh,  
 damṣṭrenāikena cōddhṛtya  
 sve sthāne nyaviṣan mahīm

- o: When all the surface of the earth was flooded with water then the Lord, as he wandered about in this entire sea and in this air, like a firefly in the night in the rainy season, sought everywhere (for a place) to fix the earth upon, and when he saw the earth under water and secretly wished to save it, (the

( ' said to himself:) what shape shall I assume to save the earth from the waters, as he thus turned the matter over in his mind and saw with his divine eyes, he thought of the shape of a boar which animal loves to play in the water, and when he had given himself a boar's body that could speak and which agreed with the traditions of the Veda's, ten yojana's broad and a hundred yojana's long, resembling a great mountain in shape, shining with sharp tusks, thundering like a mass of clouds, and resembling a dark cloud, then the Lord descended like an offering-boar into the water, drew the earth up with one of his tusks and set it back in its place.

This is often referred to, f.i. I,<sup>1216</sup>. III,<sup>10927</sup>, <sup>10950</sup>. XII,<sup>7617</sup>, <sup>7693</sup>. In XIII.<sup>6016</sup> it is said that he, in the form of a boar, slew Hiranyāxa

Vārāhaṁ rūpam āsthāya  
Hiranyāxo nipātitaḥ.

3. As Man-lion, nṛ- and narasimha. See III,<sup>15833</sup>:

Punar eva mahābāhur  
apūrvam tanum ācṛitaḥ,  
narasya kṛtvārdhatanum  
simhasyārdhatanum prabhuh  
Dāityendrasya sabhām gatvā (gataḥ?)  
pāṇim saṁspr̥c̥ya pāṇinā  
Dāityānām ādipuruṣaḥ  
surārir Ditinandanaḥ  
Dṛṣṭvā cāpūrvavapuṣam  
krodhat saṁraktalocanaḥ  
çūlodyatakarah sragvī  
Hiranyakaçipus tadā

Meghastanitanirghoṣo  
 nīlābracayasannibhaḥ  
 devāṛir Ditiḥ vīro  
 Nṛsimhaṁ samupādravat,  
 Samupetya tatas tīṣṇāir  
 mrgendreṇa baliyasā  
 nārasimhena vapuṣā

dāritah karajāir bhr̥ṣaṁ. (Cfr. XII, 13210.)

- o: On another occasion the strong-armed one assumed a hitherto unknown shape; after having formed the one half of his body like a man and the other half like a lion the Lord went to the chief of the Dāitya's assemblage, and when the chief of the Dāitya's, the foe of the Sura's, and the son of Diti, Hiranyakaśipu had rubbed one hand against the other, and his eyes met a hitherto unknown body he ran with eyes fired with anger, with a trident in his upraised hand and wearing a wreath, rumbling like a thunder cloud and resembling a collection of dark blue clouds, he the enemy of the gods, Diti's son, the hero, ran towards the Man-lion, and when they then collided he was torn to pieces by the sharp claws of the powerful king of beasts in the shape of a man-lion.

4. As a Horse's Head, hayaḥiras. See XII, 13478.

... atha tāu Dānavaçresthāu  
 Vedān grhya sanātānān  
 rasāṁ vivīçatus tūrṇaṁ  
 udakpūrve mahodadhāu,  
 tato hr̥teṣu Vedeṣu  
 Brahmā kaçmalam āviçat,



tato vacanam Iṣānam  
prāha Vedair vinākṛtaḥ:

Brahmôvāca: Vedā me paramaṁ caxur  
Vedā me paramaṁ balam  
Vedā me paramaṁ dhāma  
Vedā me Brahma cōttarmanā,  
Mama Vedā hrtāḥ sarve  
Dānavābhyāṁ balārditaḥ,  
andhakārā hi me lokā  
jātā Vedair vinākṛtāḥ,  
Vedān rte hi kīm kuryām,  
lokānāṁ srstīm uttamām,  
aho vata mahad dukkham  
Vedanāṣanajam mama  
Prāptam dunoti hṛdayam  
tīvram, çokaparyayanam,  
ko hi çokūṇave magnaṁ  
mām ito 'dya samuddhareḥ  
Vedāns tāmç cānayaṇ nastān  
kasya cāham priyo bhavē.  
ity-evam bhāṣamānasya  
brahmaṇo nṛpasattama  
Hares stotrārtham udbhūtā  
buddhir buddhimatām vara,  
tato jagāu paraṁ japyam  
prāñjalipragrahaḥ prabhuh:

Brāhmôvāca: [Om] namas te Brahmahṛdaya  
namas te mama pūrvaja  
lokādya bhuvanagr̥tha — — —  
Te me Vedā hrtāç caxur,  
andho jāto 'smi jāgr̥hi,  
dadasva caxūṁṣi mama

priyo 'hañ te priyo 'sī me,  
 Evañ stutah sa Bhagavān  
 purusah sarvatomukhah  
 jahāu nidrām atha, tadā  
 vedakāryārtham udyatah  
 Āṣvaryaena prayogena  
 dvitīyān tanum asthītah,  
 sunāsikena kāyena  
 bhūtvā candraprabhas tadā  
 Krtvā hayaçirah çubhrañ  
 Vedānām ālayah prabhuh,  
 Etad dhayaçirah kṛtvā  
 nānāmūrtibhir āvītañ  
 antardadhau sa viçveço  
 viveça ca rasam prabhuh — — —  
 Etasmim antare rājan  
 devo hayaçirodharah  
 jagrāha Vedān akhilān  
 rasatalagato Harih  
 Prādāc ca Brahmane bhūyas,  
 tatah, svām prakṛtīm gatah  
 sthapayitvā hayaçira  
 udakpūrve mahodadhāu...  
 Atha yudham samabhavat  
 taylor Nārāyaṇasya vāi,  
 rajastamovistatanū  
 tāv ubhāu Madhu-Kāitabhāu  
 Brahmano 'pacitīm kurvan  
 jaghāna Madhusūdanah.

9. Thereupon those two most exalted among the  
 Dānava's took the eterual Veda's and stepped  
 quickly into the water in the north-east sea; when

thus the Veda's were stolen sorrow, took possession of Brahmā, and robbed of the Veda's he spoke as follows to Īcāna (Viṣṇu): The Veda's are my best eyes, the Veda's are my best strength, the Veda's are my best abode, the Veda's are for me the best Brahma, all my Veda's are stolen from me by the two Dānava's, my strength is gone, the worlds have become dark to me without the Veda's, (without) the Veda's which are the best creation in the world, certainly great anguish which arises from the loss of the Veda's torments my heart, a sharp (pain) full of sorrow; who will save me who is plunged in a sea of sorrow, and bring the lost Veda's back again and to whom am I endeared; while Brahmā spoke thus, o most exalted of princes, it occurred to him that he had better extol Hari, and trying with folded hands to win his favour, the Lord uttered the following prayer. Praise be to thee, o thou heart of Brahmā, honour to thee, who art born before me, o thou who art the first born of the world, the best of existence... those my Veda's which are my eyes, are stolen, I have become blind. wake up, give me my eyes, I am dear to thee, and thou art dear to me; being thus praised that high being with faces on all sides awoke, and in order to regain the Veda's he, using power and exertion, assumed another form; after having obtained a body with a handsome nose, he shone like the moon, and when he had fashioned himself a shining horse's head then the Lord was the habitation of the Veda's... After having made himself this horse's head which was hidden in different shapes, the al-

mighty one disappeared and the Lord stepped into the water . . . In the meanwhile the god with the horse's head, yon Hari, who had gone down to the bottom of the sea, seized all the Veda's and restored them to Brahmā, thereupon he again assumed his proper shape after having deposited the horse's head in the north-east sea. — Thereupon a struggle took place between those two (Asura's) and Nārāyaṇa, and both of them, Madhu and Kāiṭabha, who had a body ensnared in passion and darkness, were killed by Madhusūdana in honour of Brahmā.

5. As Kṛṣṇa. In III, 16848 it is said:

Asatām nigrāharthāya  
 dharmasamraksanāya ca  
 avatīrno manusyānām  
 ajāyata Yadu-xaye,  
 Sa eṣa Bhagavān Viṣṇuḥ  
 Kṛṣṇēti parikīrtiyate.

o: To restrain evil people and to take care of dharma, descended to mankind, he was born in the family of the Yadu's; that high Viṣṇu is extolled under the name of Kṛṣṇa.

The details in the story of Kṛṣṇa must be looked for in the Harivaṃśa and in the Bhāgavata-Purāṇa and other later works. The myth of Kṛṣṇa's hast at last overgrown the Viṣṇu-myth, in spite of Kṛṣṇa's divinity being early disputed, see Īṣupālavadhaparvan in the Mahābh. II, 1418.

The Aṣvaçiras-incarnation and the Kṛṣṇa-incarnation, occurring in the Mahābhārata, do not belong

to the usual 10 Incarnations of Viṣṇu, and of these the Matsya-incarnation is in the MBh. referred to Brahmā, and the Kūrma-incarnation (I,1122) has no connection with Viṣṇu.

### Viṣṇu's heroic Deeds.

Viṣṇu's incarnations and his exploits stand in close connection with one another. We first mention in a general sense that he wars with the Asura's either alone

Prāpnotv-amitavīryaṅgir  
adya Pārtho vasundharām  
etām purā Viṣṇur iva  
hatvā Dāiteya-Dānavān VIII,2090.  
III,5018. V,299. VII,2865.

o: Let the very mighty and glorious Pṛthā's son win the earth to-day like Viṣṇu of yore after having killed the Dāitya's and the Dānava's; or in connection with Indra (II,399), Viṣṇu going into the thunderbolt of Indra (XII,10128, 10153). He is therefore called. Asurasūdāna (V,299).

But individual Asura's killed by him are also named separately. We have already seen under his incarnations how he kills Vali (cfr. Meghadūta 57), Hiraṇyākṣa, Hiraṇyakaśipu, Madhu and Kāṭabha (IX,2350). Furthermore Naraka is mentioned (III,10910) who desired Indra's position (VII,7879), Maya, and (III,3700) Jambha, the great bowman who disturbed the sacrifices.

B. Apsaras'es. Gandharva's. Cāraṇa's.

a. Apsaras'es are the gods' female dancers, clever in dancing and singing (II, 391). They are described as being uncommonly beautiful, with lotus eyes, slender waists and swelling hips. By ravishing postures, roguish and sweet conversation they rob the spectator of thought and intellect. They deck heroes with wreaths and precious stones (VIII, 2853, 4040). In heaven they serve Śakra.

Etāṣ cānyāṣ ca nanṛtus  
tatra tatra sahasraṣaḥ  
cittaprasādana yuktah  
Siddhanāḥ padmalocanāḥ  
Mahākāṭitaṣaṣ roṇyah  
kampamānaih payodharaih  
kaṣṭhahāvam ādhuryāṣ  
cetobuddhimanoharaih. III, 1780.

o: And these and others danced in thousands here and there, busied in winning the spectator's thought, having the lotus eyes of the Siddha's, full hips and buttocks, with trembling breasts, with roguishness and grace which stole thought, sense and mind.

In III, 1805 Urvaṣī is called suṣroṇī. When she tried to tempt Arjuna, she is described as follows:

Nirgamyā candrodāyane  
vigādhe rajanīmukhe  
prasthitā sā pṛthuṣroṇī  
Pārthasya bhavanam prati  
Mṛdukūñcitadīrghaṇa  
kusumotkaradhārīṇā

keçahastena lalanā  
 jagāmātha virājatī  
 Bhrūxepālā pamādhuryāih  
 kanṭyā sāumyatayāpi ca  
 çaçinañi vaktracandreṇa  
 sāl hvayantīva gacchatī  
 Divyāñgarāgāu sumukhāu  
 divyacandanarūṣitāu  
 gacchantyā hāravikacāu  
 stanāu tasyā vavalgatuh,  
 Stanodvahanasamxobhān  
 namyamānā pade pade  
 tribalīdāmacitreṇa  
 madhyenātīvā çobhinā  
 Adhobbhūdharavistīrṇaṁ  
 nitambonnatapīvaraṁ  
 manmathāyatanaṁ çubhram  
 rasanādāmabhūṣitaṁ  
 Rṣīnām api divyānām  
 manovyāghātakāraṇaṁ  
 sūxmavastradharaṁ reje  
 jaghanaṁ niravadyavat  
 Gūḍhagulphadharāu pādāu  
 tāmraṇyatatalāṅguli  
 kūrmaprṣṭhonnatāu cāpi  
 çobhete kiñkiṇikīnāu  
 Sīdhupānena cālpena  
 tuṣṭātha madanena ca  
 vilāsanāiç ca vividhāih  
 prexaṇiyatarābhavat,  
 Siddha-Cāraṇa-Gandharvāih  
 sāl prayātā vilāsini

bahvāṇṛye 'pi vāi Svarge  
 darṇanīyatamākṛtiḥ  
 Susūxmepottariyeṇa  
 meghavarṇena rājatā  
 tanur abhrāvṛtā vyomni  
 candralekhēva gaochatī — — — III,1821.

In IX,18826 it is said:

Dr̥ṣṭvāpsarasam āyāntīm  
 Ghṛtācīm pṛthulocanām.

and in III,3013

(Bhīmī) mām upastasyati vyaktam  
 divi Qakram ivāpsarāḥ.

In V,3811 a class of Apsaras'es is named called Vi-  
 dyutprabha, 10 in number.

In II,892 we find the following names of Apsaras'es:

Micrakecī	Pramlocā
Rambhā	Urvaçī
Citresenā	Irā
Qusismitā	Vargā
Cārunetrā	Sāurabheyī
Ghṛtācī	Samīcī
Menakā	Vudvudī
Puñjikasthalā	Latā
Viçvācī	
Sahajanyā	

In III,1781:

Ghṛtācī	Pūrvacittī
Menakā	Svayamprabhā
Rambhā	Urvaçī



Miçrakeçī	Prajāgarā	
Daṇḍagaurī	Cittrasenā	
Varūthini	Citrālekhā	
Gopālī	Sahā	
Sahajanyā	Madhurasvanā	
Kumbhayoni		17

and in XIII, 1424:

Urvarā	Sukeçī	
Miçrakeçī	Sumukhī	
Rambhā	Hāsinī	
Urvaçī	Prabhā	
Alambuṣā	Vidyutā	
Ghṛtācī	Prathamī	
Mittrā	Dāntā	
Oitrāṅgadā	Vidyotā	
Ruci	Ratī	
Manoharā		19

Of these names 4 occur in all 3 lists, 2 in 2 lists:

Miçrakeçī	Menakā
Rambhā	Sahajanyā
Ghṛtācī	
Urvaçī	

It is difficult to find in these names, at least as far as most of them are concerned, anything that particularly characterises an Apsaras.

b. Gandhrava's are the musicians of heaven. They play on vīṇā's (IX, 9059) and sing songs to the most beautiful melodies.

Viṇāsu vādyamānāsu  
 Gandharvāḥ Çakranandana  
 divye manorame geye  
 pravṛtte prthulocana  
 Sarvāpsarāsu mukhyāsu  
 pranṛttāsu Kurūdvaḥ  
 tvaṁ kilāṇimiṣaḥ Pārtha  
 mām ekāṁ tatra dṛṣṭavān. III, 1848.

- o: While the viṇā's were struck by the Gandharva's.  
 o Çakra's son, and while divine and ravishing songs  
 were sung, o thou great-eyed, and while all the  
 principal Apsaras'es danced, o Kuru-son, you gazed  
 on me alone.

Avādayat tatra viṇāṁ  
 madhye Viçvāvasuḥ svayam. XII, 969.

- o: Viçvāvasu (the great Gandharva) struck the viṇa  
 himself in their midst.

Tatra sma gāthā gāyanti  
 sāmṇā paramavalgunā  
 Gandharvās Tumburu-creṣṭhāḥ  
 kuçalā gītasāmasu. III, 1783.

- o: Gandharva's with Tumburu at their head, skilful in  
 song and melody, sing songs there to the most  
 beautiful tunes.

The Gandharva's are said to reside near the lake  
 Mānasa (II, 1012) and on Mount Niṣadha.

To the Gandharva's belong also the Kinnara's and  
 other Nara's (II, 898).

c. Cāraṇa's are wandering Minstrels (Bards,  
 Troubadours). They admire and sing the praise of heroes.

Maṅgalāḥ stutibhiḥ cāpi  
 vijayapratīsamhitāḥ  
 Cāraṇāḥ stūyamānāu tāu  
 jagmataḥ parayā mudā I,<sup>7655</sup>.

- o: Under auspicious hymns of praise that proclaimed victory, extolled by the Cāraṇa's, the two set forth with great joy.

The Cāraṇa's are especially named in connection with the Siddha's (III,<sup>1758</sup>. VII,<sup>2817</sup>, 5692, 7188).

### C. The Açvin's.

The two divine Açvin's, tridaçvīnāu, (III,<sup>10845</sup>) Nāsatya and Dasra by name (XIII,<sup>7003</sup>, <sup>7583</sup>) who are distinguished by their personal beauty ( ) are the heavenly physicians who understand to restore youth and beauty to men.

Āvām devabhiṣagvarāu  
 yuvānaṁ rūpasampannaṁ  
 kariṣyāvaḥ patiṁ tava III,<sup>10356</sup>.

- o: We are the two excellent divine physicians, we will make your husband young and beautiful.

In XII,<sup>10215</sup> they are called bhisajāu varāu, the two excellent physicians.

According to I,<sup>2599</sup> they are the offspring of Tvāṣṭrī and Savitar and belong to the Guhyaka's, but in XIII,<sup>1128</sup> they are said to have arisen from the tears of Agni, and in XII,<sup>7583</sup>. XIII,<sup>7003</sup> they are named as being the sons of Mārtanda and said to have come from (his wife's) Sañjñā's nose.

Indra would not acknowledge their divinity and

their right to the Soma-offer, as by birth they were Çūdra's (XII,7590), but he was compelled to do so by Cyavana who had received perpetual youth from them (III,10871. XIII,7807. III,10849). See below.

### The Deeds of the Açvin's.

In III,10845 we read the following tale about the Açvin's:

Kasyacit tv-atha kālasya  
tridaçāv Açvināu nrpa  
kṛtābhiṣekām vivṛtām  
Sukanyām tām apaçyatām.  
Tām dṛṣṭvā darçanīyāṅgīm  
devarūjasutām iva  
ūcatuḥ samabhidrutya  
Nāsatyav Açvināv idam:  
Kasya tvam asi vāmora  
vane 'smin kiṁ karoṣi ca  
icchāva bhadre jñātum tvām  
tattvam ākhyāhi çobhane.  
Tataḥ Sukanyā savrīḍā  
tāv uvāca surottamāu:  
Çaryātitanayām vittaṁ  
bhāryām mām Cyavanasya ca.  
Athāçvināu prahasyātām  
abrūtām punar eva tu:  
katham tvam asi kalyāṇi  
pitṛā dattā gatādhvane  
Bhrājase 'smin vane bhīru  
vidyut sādāmini yathā  
na deveṣv-api tulyām hi  
tvayāpaçyāva bhāvini,

Anābharāṇasampannā  
 paramāmbaravarjitā  
 çobhayasy-adhikaṁ bhadre  
 vanam apy-analāṅkr̥tā  
 Sarvābharāṇasampannā  
 paramāmbaradhārīṇī  
 çobhase tv-anavadyāṅgi  
 na tv-evam malapaṅkinī,  
 Kasmād evamvidhā bhūtvā  
 jarājarjaritaṁ patim  
 tvam upāsse ha kalyāṇi  
 kāmabhogavahiṣkṛtaṁ  
 Asamarthaṁ paritrāṇe  
 poṣaṇe ca çucismite,  
 sā tvaṁ Cyavanam utsrjya  
 varayasvāikam āvayoh  
 Patyartham devagarbhābhe  
 mā vṛthā yāuvanam kr̥thāh,  
 evam uktā Sukanyāpi  
 surāu tāv idam abravīt:  
 Ratāhaṁ Cyavane patyāu  
 māivaṁ mān paryaçaṅkithāh;  
 tāv abrūtām panas tv-enām:  
 āvāṁ devabhiṣagvarāu  
 Yuvānam rūpasampannam  
 kariṣyāvah patim tava,  
 tatas tasyāvāyoç cāiva  
 vṛpoṣvānyatamaṁ patim.  
 Etena samayenāṇinam  
 āmantraya patim cubhe;  
 sā tayor vacanād rājann  
 upasaṅgamyā Bhārgavam

Uvāca vākyam yat tābhyām  
 uktaṁ Bhṛgu-sutaṁ prati,  
 tac chrutvā Cyavano bhāryām  
 uvāca: kriyatām iti  
 Bhartrā sā samanujñātā  
 kriyatām ity-athābravīt;  
 çrutvā tadâçvināu vākyam  
 tai tasyāḥ kriyatām iti  
 Ūcatū rājaputrīm taṁ:  
 patis tava viçatv-apaḥ;  
 tato 'mbhaç Cyaranah çighraṁ  
 rūpārthī praviveça ha.  
 Açvināv api tad rūjan  
 sarah prāviçatām tadā,  
 tato muhūrtād uttīrṇāḥ  
 sarve te saratas tadā  
 Divyarūpadharāḥ sarve  
 yuvāno mṛṣṭakuṇḍalāḥ  
 tulyaveçadharāç cāiva  
 manasaḥ prītivardhanāḥ  
 Te 'bruvan sahitāḥ sarve:  
 vṛṇīṣvānyatamaṁ çubhe  
 asmākam īpsitaṁ bhadre  
 patitve varavarṇini  
 Yatra vāpy-abbikāmāsi  
 taṁ vṛṇīṣva suçobhane,  
 sā samīxya tu tān sarvāṁs  
 tulyarūpadharān sthitān  
 Niçcitya manasā buddhyā  
 devī vavre svakaṁ patiṁ,  
 labdhvā tu Cyavano bhāryām  
 vayo rūpaṁ ca vāñchitaṁ

Hr̥sto 'bravīn mahātejās  
 tāu Nāsatyāv idam vacah:  
 yathāham rūpasampanno  
 vayasā ca samanvitah  
 Kr̥to bhavadhyām vṛddhah san  
 bhāryāñ ca prāptavān imām  
 tasmād yuvām kariṣyāmi  
 prītyāham somapitīnāu  
 Miṣato devarājasya,  
 satyam etad bravīmi vām;  
 tac chrutvā hr̥ṣṭamānasāu  
 divam tāu prati jagmatuh,  
 Cyavanaḥ ca Sukanyā ca  
 surāv iva vijahratuh.

- o: 'Once on a time, O king, those celestials, namely, the twin Aṇwins happened to behold Sukanyā, when she had (just) bathed, and when her person was bare. And seeing that one of excellent limbs, and like unto the daughter of the lord of celestials, the nose-born Aṇwins neared her, and addressed her, saying, — O thou of shapely thighs, whose daughter art thou? And what doest thou in this wood? O auspicious one, O thou of excellent grace, we desire to know this, — do thou therefore tell us. — Thereupon she replied bashfully unto those foremost of celestials, — Know me as Saryāti's daughter, and Chyavana's wife. — Thereat the Aṇwins again spake unto her, smiling, — What for, O fortunate one, hath thy father bestowed thee on a person who is verging on death? Surely, O timid girl, thou shinest in this wood like lightning. Not in the regions of the celestials themselves, O girl, have our

eyes lighted on thy like. O damsel, unadorned and without gay robes as thou art, thou beautifiest this wood exceedingly. Still, O thou of faultless limbs. thou canst not look so beautiful, when (as at present) thou art soiled with mud and dirt. as thou couldst, if decked with every ornament and wearing gorgeous apparel. Why, O excellent wench, in such plight servest thou a decrepit old husband, and one that has become incapable of realising pleasure and also of maintaining thee, O thou of luminous smiles? O divinely beautiful damsel, do thou. forsaking Chyavana, accept one of us for husband. It behoveth thee not to spend thy youth fruitlessly. —

„Thus addressed, Sukanyā answered the celestials, saying, — I am devoted to my husband, Chyavana: do ye not entertain any doubts (regarding my fidelity). — Thereupon they again spake unto her, — We two are the celestial physicians of note. We will make thy lord young and graceful. Do thou then select one of us — viz, ourselves and thy husband — thy partner. Promising this, do thou, O auspicious one, bring hither thy husband. — O king, agreeably to their words, she went to Bhrigu's son. and communicated to him what the two celestials had said. Hearing her message, Chyavana said unto his wife, — Do thou so. — Having received the permission of her lord (she returned to the celestials) and said, — Do ye so. — Then hearing her words, viz, — 'Do ye so, — they spake unto the king's daughter, — Let thy husband enter into water. — Thereat Chyavana, desirous of obtaining beauty, quickly entered into water. The twin Acvins



also, O king, sank into the sheet of water. And the next moment they all came out of the tank in surpassingly beautiful forms, and young, and wearing burnished ear-rings. And all possessed of the same appearance, pleasing to behold, addressed her, saying — O fortunate one, do thou choose one of us for spouse. And, O beauteous one, do thou select him for lord who may please thy fancy. — Finding, however, all of them of the same likeness, she deliberated; and at last ascertaining the identity of her husband, even selected him.

„Having obtained coveted beauty and also his wife, Chyavana, of exceeding energy, well pleased, spake these words unto the nose-born celestials, — Since at your hands, an old man, I have obtained youth, and beauty, and also this wife of mine, I will, well-pleased, make you quaffers of the Soma juice in the presence of the lord of celestials himself. This I tell you truly. — Hearing this, highly delighted, the twins ascended to heaven; and Chyavana and Sukanyā began to pass their days happily, even like celestials.'” (Roy.)

#### D. The Lokapāla's.

As Lokapāla's ०: Guardians of the world, 4 are named in III, 2138, cfr. 2127, 2140 follow. (Manu, V, 98 has 8).

Evam ukte Nāiṣadhena  
 Maghavān abhyabhāṣata:  
 Amarān vāi nibodhāsmān  
 Damayantīartham āgatān,  
 Aham Indro 'yam Agniṣ ca

tathâivāyam Apām patih  
 çarīrāntakaro nṛnām,  
 Yamo 'yam api pārthiva,  
 Tvaṁ vāi samāgatān asmān  
 Damayantyāi nivedaya:  
 Lokapālā Mahendrādyaḥ  
 sabhām yānti didraxavah,  
 prāptum icchanti devās tvaṁ  
 Çakro 'gnir Varuṇo Yamah.

- o: When this was said by the Nāiṣadha, Maghavat answered: know that we are immortals who have come for Damayanti's sake, I am Indra, and this is Agni, and this likewise is the lord of the waters; and this, o chief, is Yama who destroys men's bodies, let it be known to D. that we have come: the Guardians of the world, Mahendra and the others will come to the meeting desirous of seeing (thee), the gods wish to win thee, Çakra, Agni, Varuṇa (and) Yama.

But in III,<sup>1070</sup> Kuvera is inserted instead of Agni. In III,<sup>10170</sup> Rāvaṇa, alluding to himself says that he is renowned in being known as the 5<sup>th</sup> Lokapāla, which proves that ordinarily there are only 4.

Concerning 1. Indra and 2. Varuṇa see above, about 3. Agni see below.

#### 4. Yama.

This god's more frequently recurring names are besides Yama (XIII,<sup>3502</sup>) the following: Pitṛrāja (I,<sup>7077</sup>. XIII,<sup>4495</sup>. VIII,<sup>1074</sup>), Pitṛnām prabhu (XII,<sup>4495</sup>). Pitṛnām içvara (III,<sup>10658</sup>), Pitṛnām samāvartin (XII,<sup>7552</sup>), Pretarāja (III,<sup>11849</sup>) and the like, further Vāivasvata (XII,<sup>4495</sup>. XIII,<sup>3500</sup>).

He is called Yama, it being he who keeps mankind in check:

Yamo yacchati bhūtāni

sarvāny-evāviṣṣatah. XII,8116. III,16781.

o: Yama controls all beings without distinction.

Gatah sa, bhagavān devah

prajāsaṁyamano Yamah. III,16813.

Pitrāja he is called because he rules in the kingdom of the dead, the pitr's or the ancestors, and

Vāivasvata as the son of Vivasvat, Vivasvata-suta, Vivasvata-tanaya o: son of the shining sun (III,16788).

As son of the sun one would suppose that he would keep in the neighbourhood of the sun, but on the contrary

his Kingdom, it is true, is in the South, but under the earth (V,8779. VIII,2102. XIII,4661. III,1680. 11818). In V,8782 the South is called Yama's second door, cfr. first door at the beginning of the former chapter. His kingdom has many names: Yama-rāṣṭra (IX,750. VII,1447). -xaya (II,1437. XII,168. 11128), -śādana (I,1710. 1768. 4147. VII,5344); also Pitriloka (V,1581) and Mahā-niraya (XII,13075).

In this realm is the river Vāitaranī (V,3792) and the Rāurava-hell (XIII,4826).

His dwelling, called Saṁyamana, is described as being marvellously beautiful (III,11849) and his

Assembly-hall, sabhā (II,311 follow.) which was built by Viçvakarman shines like bright gold. Here is neither sorrow nor decrepitude, neither is there hunger or thirst, but all you can wish for is to be found there, and many sages and kings assemble there to pay homage

to Yama. And there is singing, dancing and merriment from Gandharva's and Apsaras'es. Such is the high Pitṛ-king's assemblage.

Īdr̥ṣī sū sabbhā rājan

Pitṛrājño mahātmanah II,352.

His person is described as being dark, *çyāma*, (III,16812), with red eyes, *lohitāxa*, (XII 134), with a dreadfully shaped body, *ghorarūpa*, (III,14550), with majestic manners, *puruṣa mahāujas* (III.16812). In III.16750 his appearance is thus depicted.

Muhūrtād eva cāpaçyat

puruṣam raktavāsasam

baddhamāulim vapuṣmantam

ādityasamatejasam

Çyāmavadūtām raktāxam

puṣahastam bhayāvahanam

sthitam Satyavataḥ pārçve

nirixantam tam eva ca.

o: Suddenly she saw a man in red clothes with his hair tied up on the top of his head, of great size, shining like the sun and of bright blue colour, with red eyes, holding a noose in his hand, striking her with terror, standing by the side of Satyavat and gazing at him.

His wife is named *Dhūmorṇā* (XIII,7637). *Daxa prajāpati* gave 10 of his daughters to Yama (I,2577). But in XII.2252 *Çrī* is named as being his consort. thus also in I,2578.

His messengers, *puruṣa*. are described as wearing black apparel, having red eyes, bristling hair, and legs, eyes and noses like a crow (XIII,3390).

His charioteer, sārathi. is called in XII,<sup>12085</sup> Roga, sickness.

His weapons are a staff, daṇḍa (I,<sup>7077</sup>), Yama-daṇḍa (IX,<sup>3202, 151</sup>. VII,<sup>69115</sup>. V,<sup>7271</sup>. XII,<sup>128</sup>), and a noose, pāṣa, (VII,<sup>1617</sup>. III,<sup>16755</sup>).

Yama has two four-eyed dogs, offspring of Saramā who in III,<sup>14187</sup> is called mātā ṣunām devī and in I,<sup>672</sup> devaṣunī; cfr. Monier-Williams in Ind. Antiq. 1877. p. 313.

Most of the names of this god indicate two sides of his character:

a. He is the God of death who destroys life in man, therefore he is called Lokāntakṛt (III,<sup>1672</sup>), Kālāntaka-Yama (III,<sup>879</sup>), Yamāntaka (II,<sup>690</sup>), Antaka (I,<sup>1617</sup>. V,<sup>2236</sup>), wherefore he is also accompanied by Mr̥tyu, death, and is surrounded by hundreds of dreadful diseases (III,<sup>14550</sup>) and his messengers, Yamadūta (III,<sup>3119, 16760</sup>) who execute his commands, lead the fatigued through a barren district, where there is neither shade nor water, on to Yama (III,<sup>13397</sup>).

To die is called to go to Yama's mansion (III,<sup>451</sup>), to kill to send to Yama's mansion (III,<sup>1560</sup>).

b. Secondly he is as Pretarāja, the king of the dead, (I,<sup>2063</sup>. III,<sup>11849</sup>), the just judge, Dharmarāja (I,<sup>976</sup>. III,<sup>16074, 16788</sup>), Dharmendra (VII,<sup>160</sup>), before whose throne all must meet (XII,<sup>12078</sup>), but they must go there singly without friends or relatives, their deeds only accompany them (XII,<sup>12098</sup>). And he is not only wise in dharma, but he is himself Dharma (III,<sup>7079</sup>), and the whole world has its root in dharma

sarvo hi loko nr̥pa dharmamūlah XII,<sup>4407</sup>.

And as the avenger he is himself Daṇḍa (XII,<sup>484</sup>).

As ruler of Pitṛloka, the world of ancestors, he is, as a king, gracious towards the just, and punishes the unjust (XII.<sub>2778, 7552</sub>. V.<sub>7793</sub>. XIII.<sub>4856</sub>), and daṇḍa is the symbol of his righteous judgements and chastising power, and on these heaven and earth rest. (XII.<sub>426</sub> follow).

Daṇḍah ṇāsti prajāḥ sarvā

daṇḍa evābhiraṇṇati

daṇḍah supteṣu jāgati

daṇḍam dharmam vidur budhāḥ XII.<sub>425</sub> — Manu VI.<sub>18</sub>.

- o: The staff rules over all creatures, the staff protects (them all), the staff watches the sleeping, the staff acknowledge the wise to be dharma.

Daṇḍe sthitāḥ prajāḥ sarvā,

daṇḍe sarvaṁ vidur budhāḥ,

daṇḍe svargo manuṣyānām

loko 'yaṁ 'ca pratiṣṭhitah XII.<sub>466</sub>.

- o: To the staff all beings are subject, all things depend on the staff say the wise, by the staff stand Svarga and this world of mankind fast.

In XIII.<sub>3505</sub> follw. the delightful regions and dwellings are described to which the righteous come after death.

As a specimen of the punishments of Hell we mention the following:

Yo lubdhah sabhr̥ṇam priyānṛtaḥ ca manuṣyah

satatanikṛtivanābhiraṇṇatiḥ syāt

Upanidhibhir asukhakṛt sa paramanirayaḥ

bhr̥ṇam asukham anubhavati duṣkṛtakarmā,

Uṣṇām Vāitaranīm nadīm

avagādho 'sipatravanabhinnagātrah

Paraṇvānaṇayo nipatito

vasati ca Mahāviraye bhṛṇārttah. XII,12071.

- o: That man who is led by desire, who is dishonest, is fond of base language, who causes distress having property in charge (?), he goes to the greatest hell and suffers great distress as one who has practised misdeeds; sunk in the hot stream, Vāitaranīm, his limbs wounded in the sword-leaved forest, lying there fallen in the forest of axes, he lives frightfully tortured in the great hell.

In III,552 is related, how Agastya sees his forefathers in hell, hanging in a cave head downwards, and how they might be saved (for the Deva-world) if he marries and has a son who can continue the descent of the family.

According to XII,525 there are two roads: one leading to the Pitṛ's, and one leading to the Deva's. In XII,1008, 1131, 5417 the Pitṛ's and the Deva's are likewise opposed to one another, but in II,400 follow. it is said that Pitṛ's, of whom there are 7 classes, serve Brahmā in heaven.

### Yama's Deeds.

One of the most charming episodes in the Mahābhārata is the tale of the faithful woman Sāvitṛī to whom Yama from pity gave back her husband, restoring him to life again.

King Aṇvapati's daughter Savitṛī who was as beautiful as Ṡṛī chose Satyavat for her husband. He was the son of king Dyumatsena who was blind and lived in the forest having been despoiled of his kingdom by his enemy. The divine sage Nārada told her

father that Satyavat amidst all his virtues had one fault, and that was that at the end of a year he would die. When king Aṇvapati heard this he said to Sāvitṛī: go and choose another, but Sāvitṛī did not waver, and Nārada approved of her choice. She married Satyavat and clothed herself in bark and red garments, and by her helpfulness and solicitude and unselfishness she won all hearts. Life in the hermitage ran smoothly and peacefully, but Sāvitṛī pondered night and day unceasingly on Nārada's words, and penances emaciated her. Then when one day Satyavat, at the time the sands of his life had nearly run out, took his axe and went into the forest to fetch wood, Sāvitṛī followed her husband with smiles on her lips at the sight of the flowering wood and the clear rivers, but pained in her heart with sorrow. And Satyavat said to her: look at these divine rivers and these gorgeous flowering trees! But Sāvitṛī's thoughts dwelt only on Nārada's prophecy. And Satyavat plucked fruit and began to cut the branches off the trees, but as the exertion made him perspire, and his head began to ache, he approached his wife, saying: I should like to rest and sleep a little. So Sāvitṛī sat down on the ground and laid his head on her lap. The next moment she saw a man coming who was dressed in red clothing, he had a diadem on his head and a noose in his hand. He came close to Satyavat and stood looking at him. Then Sāvitṛī laid her husband's head gently on the ground, and as she rose said tremblingly and in a sorrowful tone: thou art a god, tell me, what is thy will. Yama answered: yes I am Yama; your husband's days are ended, and I have come to lead him away, that is my errand. Sāvitṛī



replied: I have heard that thy messengers come to fetch mortals, how is it that thou thyself hast come? And Yama answered: this prince is very virtuous, therefore I have come myself. And Yama drew forth the dead man's soul and began to lead it towards the south. But Sāvitrī followed him. Yama said: go back Sāvitrī, and mourn for thy husband, thou art now freed from thy duties towards thy lord, and thou canst not accompany us. But Sāvitrī replied: where my husband goes there will I follow him, that is the eternal law. Yama answered: thine argument pleases me, choose a gift from me, and with the exception of thy husband's life, whatsoever it be, it shall be granted. And Sāvitrī asked first that her father-in-law might have his sight and his kingdom restored to him, and Yama answered: so be it! She asked next that her father might have a hundred sons to propagate his race, and Yama consented also to this desire, but reminded her at the same time that she must really go back now as she had already come too far. But Sāvitrī said: the last wish you granted me cannot be fulfilled without my husband, therefore I pray thee give me his life, without him I am as one dead, and do not even desire heaven, thou hast thyself promised me a hundred sons, and yet thou wilt take my husband from me, let Satyavat live that thy promise may be fulfilled. Then at last Yama gave way, and Sāvitrī got back her husband.

E. The Marut's, the Gods of the winds.

The etymology of the word Marut is uncertain. Marut comes perhaps from mar = to shine, see Grassm. Wörterbuch. The Marut's are often named in the Ma-

hābhārata. generally combined with other deities as in III,1709. VI,1258, 1260. Hariv.,441, 11050, 12112 etc., but particularly together with Indra who in consequence is also called Ma'rutvat.

Marudbhih saha jetvārīn  
 Bhagavān Pākaçāsanah  
 ekāikam kratum āhr̥tya  
 çatakṛtvah Çatakratuh  
 dhūtapāpmā jitasvargo  
 lokān prāpya sukhodayān  
 Marudgaṇair vṛtah Çakrah  
 çuçubhe bhāsayan diçah. XII,1109.

o: Having conquered the enemy together with the Marut's and after having made a hundred sacrifices one after another, Çatakratu having shaken off his sin and conquered Svarga and obtained worlds of gladness, surrounded by crowds of Marut's Çakra shone while lighting up all the quarters of the heavens.

See furthermore XIII,916. XIV,1476. III,11523, 14782.

The accounts in V,3808 and in IX,3213 about the origin of the Marut's are equally absurd and equally disgusting, according to the first they would also be Dāitya's.

In XIII,5815 seven Marut's are spoken of (cfr. IX,3222), and in V,1225 Marici is mentioned as the most distinguished of them. According to this the Marut's would be identical with the Prajāpati's.

Their function is to protect Indra in his battles with his enemies (VIII,4206).

F. The Pitṛ's. See above under Yama.

G. The Prajāpati's. See above under Brahmā.

H. The Rībhu's.

The Rībhu's constitute the highest class of the gods. They neither need sacrifices nor amṛta. They are entirely without desire. They are superior both to happiness and to misery. They are eternal gods who survive every kalpa (æon), therefore even the Deva's desire that state. In III,<sup>15157</sup> we read:

Teṣāṃ tathāvidhānān tu  
lokānāṃ munipuṅgava  
upary-upari lokasya  
lokā divyū guṇānvitāḥ.  
Purastād brāhmaṇās tatra  
lokās tejomayāḥ ṣubhāḥ  
yatra yūnty- R̥sayo brahman  
pūtāḥ svāḥ karmabhiḥ ṣubhaiḥ,  
R̥bhavo nāma tatrānye  
devānāṃ api devatāḥ  
tesāṃ lokāḥ paratare  
yān yajantiḥ devatāḥ  
Svayamprabhās te bhāsvanto  
lokāḥ kāmādughāḥ pare,  
na teṣāṃ strīkṛtas tāpo  
na lokāḥ varyamatsarah,  
Na vartayanty-āhutiḥ  
te nāpy-amṛtabhojanāḥ  
tathā divyaṇṇirās te  
na ca vighrahaṃśtāyāḥ,  
Na sukhe sukhakāmās te  
devadevāḥ sanātānāḥ  
na kalpaparivarteṣu

parivartanti te tathā,  
 Jarā mṛtyuh kutas teṣāṃ  
 haṛṣaḥ prītiḥ sukhaṃ na ca  
 na duḥkhaṃ na sukhaṃ cāpi  
 rāga-dveṣāu kuto mune,  
 Devānāṃ api Modgalya  
 kāṅkṣitā sā gatiḥ parā,  
 duṣprāpā paramā siddhir  
 agamyā kāmagocarāḥ.

- o: But above each separate world of these thus conditioned worlds are the divine spheres with the highest virtues; above all are there the brahmanic worlds, the glorious, the beautiful, where Rṣi's go when purified by their works. There are other godheads among the gods there, Ribhu's by name their worlds are still higher, and even the gods here worship them, self-luminous are these shining worlds that yield all that one wishes for, the eminent (beings here) have no lust called forth by women, neither do they thirst for worldly power; they do not live by sacrifices and do not partake of Amṛta, they have divine bodies and not material forms; they do not seek pleasure in happiness these eternal gods of gods, neither are they whirled about in the rolling world's revolutions (kalpa), they do not know old age and death, nor amusement, joy and gladness, not pain nor happiness, nor love and hate; sought by the gods themselves is that high elevated station which is difficult to reach, the highest perfection which cannot be acquired by those who are governed by their passions.

## I. The Rṣi's.

Different Rṣi's are often mentioned in the MBh., sometimes in a general way as Rṣi's, ṛṣi, and Great-Rṣi's. maharṣi, and sometimes especially as Deva-Rṣi's, devarṣi (XVII.106), Brahman-Rṣi's, brahmarṣi (III.11089), and King-Rṣi's, rajarṣi (XII.694). Of the first mentioned there are said to be 7 with Vaciṣṭha at their head (III.11855).

Sapta devaṛṣayas tāta

Vaciṣṭha-pramukhās tadā, cfr. XII,19722 follow.

These must therefore be identical with the 7 Prajāpati's, cfr. supra.

Amongst the great number of Rṣi's Bhṛgu (XII.96) Vṛhaspati, the teacher of the gods (I.3211) and Nārada (I.3191) are most frequently named.

About the different practices of the different sorts of Rṣi's see XIII.6485 follow.

## J. The Rudra's.

The Rudra's or the Storm-gods are said in XII 7540 to be sons of Dharma (Yama), and in XII,1498 to have Iṣāna (Śiva) as their protector, goptar. They are 11 (III,10667) in number, named in I.2565 thus:

Mṛgavyādhaç ca Sarpaç ca

Nirṛtiç ca mahāyaçāh

Ajāikapād-Ahimbudhnyah

Pinākī ca parantapah

Dahano 'theçvaraç cāiva

Kapālī ca mahādyutih

Sthānur Bhagaç ca bhagavān

Rudrā 'ekādaça smṛtāh. Cfr. I,4825.

Another list different from this is to be found in XIII,<sup>7090</sup>, cfr. Wilson, V. P. p. 121. But in XIII,<sup>981</sup> it is said that 1100 Rudra's praised Maheçvara.

### Rudra-Çiva.

In the Çiva-myth there is a remarkable duality, and it is not easy to explain wherein it has its origin.

In all likelihood the myth is a nature-myth which has arisen from the contemplation of the workings of nature with her manifold changes of character; and I am inclined to think that it must be understood as being originally an expression for, and a description of living nature in a mountainous district, with its often great contrasts between the inclement winter season, with its icy atmosphere and sparkling snow, and the balmy summer time delightful with its rich vegetation, and its coolness in opposition to the burning heat in the valleys below.

But this does not exclude the possibility of the myth having gradually altered in character, and the reason of its alteration from roughness to smoothness may lie in the change of disposition in the Hindu's themselves, after having removed from the north-west provinces, with their severe climate, to the valley of the Ganges, and from being a people divided in clans had become a community with social-ethical institutions, and with ascetism as the principal feature of their religious life.

That however Rudra is the oldest part of the myth is clearly shewn from the name of Rudra so frequently occurring in Rigveda, while Çiva is only used as an adjective in the sense of bringing good fortune, being gracious.

Çiva is most often in the Mahābhārata called Mahā-

deva the great god (II,1642. III,11985. VII,9623) or Devadeva, god of gods (III,11992), but he has, however, many other names concerning which see below.

He is a son of Brahmā, sprung from his forehead, lalāṭaprabhava (XII,13705, 13723); but according to III, he sprang from Viṣṇu's forehead.

He dwells on the holy Himavat.

Here on the ridge of Himavat the mighty master always sits, shining like the fire at the end of a Yuga (V,3325). On the north side of Mount Meru is a lovely Karṇikāra-wood, full of flowers from all seasons of the year; there, surrounded by divine beings, Paçupati, Umā's husband, rejoices (VI,218. XIII,9339). In XII,10212 we find him on a horn of the mountain Meru called Savitra, and in VII,9465 on Mount Mandara.

He has fiery red hair (harikeça, vilohita) which flames like the sun (III,13233. VII,9522. X,356).

He has four faces. caturmukha, which he acquired in the following manner: Brahmā once created a beautiful woman named Tillottamā by extracting from each pearl (or costly thing) a small portion. Then this woman came, incomparable in shape and with a radiant countenance, and walked round Mahādeva and tempted him, and on whichever side she approached him there appeared a handsome face on his person. The three faces that turn towards east, north and west, are mild like the moon, but that which turns to the south is harsh. With that which turns to the east he rules, with that which turns to the north he is joyful to gether with Umā, the countenance he turns to the west is mild and brings gladness to all living creatures, but

that which turns to the south is terrible and destroys all beings (XIII,6890 follow. 6881).

He has three eyes and is therefore called trine-tra', tryambaka (III,11984. XII,10857. VII,1579, 2875, 9024. Kālidāsa's Meghadūta, V,58), tryaxa (III,1519. VII,9629. VIII,4869. XII,10122), trinayana (Kālidāsa's Meghadūta V.62). They shine like three suns (XIII,846). In X,1251? it is said that Sun, Moon and Agni are his three eyes.

How Çiva came to have a third eye is related in XIII,6892: To Hara came one day under a shower of flowers the beautiful daughter of the mountain (Umā) and standing behind him, smilingly and in jest put her hands suddenly over his eyes. Straightway everything was veiled in darkness and all life seemed to be extinguished. People trembled from fright; and as the lord of all beings had shut his eyes, the world was apparently without a sun. But the darkness soon disappeared, for a third eye flamed forth like a sun on his forehead. There is another version in XII,13205.

He has a blue neck and is therefore called Nīlakaṇṭha (II,1641. XIII,843. 1154), likewise Çitikaṇṭha (X,252. Kālidāsa's Kumāra-S. II,61) and Çrikaṇṭha (XII,13705).

There are different reasons given for his having a blue neck. Sometimes it is said that it was because he swallowed the strong poison, Halāhala, which came forth when the gods and the Asuras churned the ocean (see above), sometimes it is accounted for by Indra having thrown his thunderbolt after him (Çiva) (XIII,6897), a third version is that he was bitten by the snakes that darted out from Uçana's hair (XII,13205 follow., conf. 10680).



He has ten arms (XIII,1151).

He is clothed in skins (II,1643. X,256), especially in tiger skins (XIII,981). He is called the white one (VII,2858), for according to XIII,814 he wears a shining white garment, and his wreaths, shoulder cord, bull and banner are all of them white (XII,10361). And he bears the moon on his head as a diadem (X,261. XIII,846).

His conveyance, vāhana, driven by Kāla (III,14543), is a white bull, vṛṣa, vṛṣabha (II,416), which Brahmā gave him both as chariot and banner (XIII,6101). It has a huge body and beautiful honey-brown eyes. Its neck is very thick. Its horns are as hard as adamant, with their sharp red points it tears up the earth (Kali-dāsa's Meghad. V,52). It has broad shoulders, sleek sides and a black tail, and it is decorated with a golden girth. Its hump resembles the top of a snow mountain. On this bull Devadeva sits with Uma (XIII,881). Another account says it was the sage of the gods, Daxa, who gave the bull to Īva XIII,3723). He is therefore called Vṛṣāṇka. i.e. he whose emblem is a bull (III,10807. XIII,339, 6860. Kālid., Kumāra-S. III,14) and Vṛṣabhadhvaja, he who has a bull on his standard (III,1634).

His favourite weapon is the dreadful spear Pāṣupata, the eternal weapon, with which Maheçvara killed all the Dāityas in battle. At the end of a Yuga it destroys (saṁharate) the whole world. Mahādeva gave it to Arjuna, after he had fought with him (III,11985. VII,2888. XIII,861). It is also called Brahmaçiras (I.5306. III,1644).

His battle-axe, paraçu, has a sharp edge. He gave it to Rāma, who destroyed the Xatris with it (XIII,861).

His bow, coloured like the rainbow, called Pināka, is a mighty serpent with seven heads, a big body, sharp and very poisonous teeth. It is always in his hand, so that he can assist the gods (XIII, 819, 838). He is called Pinākin after his bow (XIII, 567, 709).

The trident, triṣūla, commonly called the fork, Ṣūla, with which formerly King Mandhātā and all his army were annihilated (XIII, 880), is also called Vijaya (III, 1455), has three sharp points. Mahādeva is named Ṣūlin after the fork (III, 1612. Kalid., Meghad. V, 11), Ṣūladhara (III, 1519) and Ṣūlapānu or Ṣūlapāni (V, 1993. III, 6055).

His wife is Umā (Kalid., Kumāra-S. I, 26), the younger daughter of the mountain-king Himavat (XII, 12169, Ramay. I, 87, 8). After Himavat had promised her to Mahādeva, the sage of the gods Bhrigu came and said „Give me this girl“, but Himavat answered: „Chosen is the excellent Rudra“. Then Bhrigu said, „Since I, who have chosen the girl, am rejected, thou shalt no longer be a bowl full of pearls“. And even up to the present day the sage's word holds good (XII, 13220). Umā also bears the names Parvatī, daughter of the mountain (XII, 13220 foll. Kālid., Kumāra-S. I, 26), Durgā the unapproachable (see below), and Gāurī, the radiant white one (X, 258). After Umā Mahādeva is often called Umāpati, Umā's lord (XIII, 1164. III, 8886).

Mahādeva has a good friend Kuvera (II, 417), and like Kuvera he is also called Lord of gold, hiraṇyapati (XII, 10862), as they both rule over the rich-in-gold Himavat. The following quotation is in harmony with this

Namo hiraṇyagarbhāya  
hiraṇyakavacāya ca

hiranyakṛtacūdāya

hiranyapataye namaḥ.

o: Honour to him who has gold inwardly, who has a golden mail, a golden comb, honour to the Lord of gold.

Mahādeva has many names and many shapes. But his names and qualities are most frequently mixed together, as if the principal thing was to enumerate as many as possible to increase his importance and divinity and make him the foremost of all, see for instance XIII.7496, 880, 1144. XII,10946; he is even, to be sure, sometimes made out to be Brahma himself (XIII,1043, 590, 784 follow.) In XII,10315. XIII,1118, 1206. it is said that he has 1008 names. in XIII,807, that he has a 1000 names and in different places he is said to be bahurūpa, having many shapes, thus for instance VII,9619. X,953. XII,12176. XIII,725 follow. All these names and shapes, some of which we have already mentioned and of which we in the following will speak of the most important, can however suitably be classified, as indeed the Hindu's themselves do, under two definitions or forms, which may be seen from XIII.7504-7510 (conf. VII.9599), to this effect:

Dve tanū tasya devasya  
vedajñā brāhmaṇā viduḥ,  
ghorān anyāṁ çivāṁ anyāṁ,  
te tanū bahudhā punaḥ.  
Ugrā ghorā tanur yā sā  
so 'gnir vidyut sa bhāskarah  
çivā sāumyā ca yā tv-asya  
dharmaḥ tv-āpo 'tha candramāḥ.

Ātmano 'rdhan tu tasyâgnih  
 somo 'rdhan punar ucyate,  
 brahmacaryam caraty-ekā  
 çivā yâsya tanns tathā  
 Yâsya ghoratanā mûrtar  
 jagat samharate tadā,  
 içvaratvān mahatvāc ca  
 Maheçvara iti smṛtah.  
 Yan nirdahati yat tixno  
 yad ugro yat pratāpavān  
 māmśaṇṇitamajjādo  
 yat tato Rudra ucyate.  
 Devānām sumahān yac ca  
 yac cāsyā viçayo mahūn  
 yac ca viçvam mahat pati  
 Mahadevas tatah smṛtah.  
 Dhūmrarūpañ ca yat tasya  
 Dhūrjatity-ata ucyate,  
 sa medhayati yan nityam  
 sarvūn vāi sarvakarmabhūh.  
 Manuṣyāñ çivam anviccharūs  
 tasmād eva Çivah smṛtah.

- o: This god has two shapes,  
 So teach the Brāhmana's versed in the Veda's,  
 a terrible and a mild  
 and these shapes are again diversified.  
 That shape which is stern and frightful  
 that is fire lightning, and the sun,  
 but that which is mild and soft  
 that is dharma, water, and the moon.  
 Furthermore the one half of him is said to be  
 fire and the other half is the moon,

likewise it is said that the one form, that which is mild practises chastity.

Still further his most frightful apparition is the one which draws in the world; and on account of his sovereign might and power

he is called Maheçvara (the great Lord).

Because he burns up (the world) because he is sharp, because he is severe, because he is flaming, because he eats flesh, blood and marrow therefore he is called Rudra.

And because he is very great amongst gods

and because his domain is great

and because he is omnipotent,

therefore he is called Mahādeva (the great god).

And because he has a dark shape,

he is also called Dhūrjati,

and because he always, in all his works

shows kindness to all mankind,

wishing them happiness

just therefore he is called Çiva.

To this duality must doubtless be added Çiva's being described as being half man and half woman.

a. As the severe, ugra (II.1642. X,252), the terrible, ghora (XII,10375), the appalling, vibhīṣaṇa (XII,10370) he appears mostly as Rudra, which clearly is his oldest name. Rudra probably means originally the howling one, from rud, to howl, shriek lat.: rudere. His laughter is frightful and hollow as the sound of the kettle-drum bhīmadundubhīhāsa (XII,10360).

As the devastating power which sweeps away and destroys all things, he is named Hara and is identified

with sickness and death as well as with that all sweeping power which at last destroys all the universe. In XIII.<sub>1146</sub> he is said to be sarvabhūtakara. he who sweeps away all beings. in X.<sub>219</sub>. XIII.<sub>6895</sub>, he is called Bhaganetrahara, in X.<sub>253</sub> Daxakratuhara. His deputy is fever (XII.<sub>10250</sub>). He is disease (VII.<sub>2877</sub>), he is death (XIII.<sub>7497</sub>). He destroys all both good and bad (XII.<sub>2781</sub>). He is unborn (X.<sub>253</sub>). This world is made by him (III.<sub>1626</sub>). By him are all things created, say the sages, and he absorbs all things created at the Yuga-demolition (IX.<sub>2280</sub>). He draws in the whole world, saṁharati, at the end of a Yuga, and swallows up all things (XIII.<sub>911-49</sub>). Everything owes it origin to Mahādeva, VII.<sub>4105</sub>, but

Adbhyas stokā yānti yathā prthaktvaṁ  
tābhiḥ cāikyam saṁxaye yanti bhūyah  
evam vidvan prabhavaṁ cāpyayaṁ ca  
matvā bhūtānām tava sayujam eti VII.<sub>9187</sub>.

o: Even as from water expanses single drops arise, and these again, at the destruction of the world mix with the waters. from whence they came, thus the wise man who reflects on the appearance and disappearance of all things becomes one with thee.

As belonging to the same feature of the nature of this god we must reckon all those names which define him as the Mighty Ruler, such as

Īcāna, the Ruler, (VII.<sub>2876</sub>. VIII.<sub>486</sub>. X.<sub>252</sub>. XII.<sub>4498</sub>).

Īcvara, the Lord. (X.<sub>252</sub>).

Maheçvara, the great Lord, (V.<sub>3825</sub>. XII.<sub>10292</sub>).

Viçveçvara, Lord of all, (III.<sub>7042</sub>).

Sthānu, the Immovable, (VII.<sub>9025</sub>. X.<sub>252</sub>. XIII.<sub>842</sub>).

Vṛṣa, the Bull, (II,1643).

and I suppose also:

Giriça, the Mountain-dweller, (VII,9521. X,250).

Kālid. has Giriça. Lord of the Mountains, see Bopp & B. R.

Paçupati, Lord over Beasts (wild ones? conf. I,1105. II,1643. III,15855. VI,219), paçunām pati (VII,2874, 2815, 9815. Kālid., Kumāra S. I,53).

As Destroyer Çiva is identified with Kāla, time (conf. supra p. 62) and is therefore described as the latter. Sa Kālas, he is Kāla (XIII,7497. 1161, 1188, 942) and of Kāla it is said: Kāla is he in whose power we all are.

Sarvasya hi prabhuh Kālo  
dharmatah samadarçanah.  
yāuvanasthāmç ca bālāmç ca  
vṛddhān garbhagatān api  
sarvān āvisate mṛtyur,  
evambhūtam idaṁ jagat. (XII,5718, 1176).

c o: Kāla is everybody's master and looks justly with the same eyes (on all) upon youths and infants on the aged and even on those who lie in the womb, Death comes to all, such is this world. ✓

All are created and are swept away again and again by Kāla (XIII,56). Thou art the beginning of the worlds, and thou art Kāla who absorbest them (XIII,918). I am Kāla the Mighty Destroyer of the world (VI,1278). Every action is accomplished at the instigation of Kāla (XIII,87). The whole world is animated by Kāla, kālātmaka (XIII,58). ✓

In connection with this may be mentioned the description of Çiva as the Hideous-one. He has ears like spears, çāṅkukarṇa, he is large-eared, mahā-

karpa, he has ears like basins, kumbhakarṇa (XII,10350). He has frightful ears and eyes, ugraçravaṇadarçana (III,10850), a misshapen mouth, vikṛtavaktra (XII,10371), a tongue like a sword, khaḍgajihva, large teeth. daṁṣṭrin, very sharp teeth (XIII,1168).

b. As the mild. the friendly, the merciful Mahādeva appears especially under the names of Īiva and Çañkara. Thus it is said of him in VII,9632:

Samedhayati yan nityam  
sarvārthān sarvakarmasu  
çivam icchan manusyānām  
tasmād eva Çivah smṛtaḥ.

- a: Because he always promotes all sorts of good fortune in all undertakings, since he wishes mankind happiness, just therefore he is called Īiva.

In VIII 4861 he is called: sarvabhūtaçivah Īivah, the towards all beings friendly Īiva, in XIII,889: sāumyavaktradhara, he who has a mild countenance, in XII,5798: sarvabhūtabhite rataḥ, he who rejoices over the happiness of all beings. In XII,5675 the following occurrence is related:

A Brahman had at last been blessed with a son, but the child died shortly afterwards from convulsions, and the relations brought it to the churchyard. A vulture which had been called thither by their loud lamentations, said to them „Go home, it is of no use staying here, all must die“. And the relations began to go away, at that moment a black jackal came out of his den and said:

„This child can perhaps come to life again, have you no love for it“. Then the men came back. But



the vulture said: „Why do you turn back, what is the use of your lamenting“. Then the jackal and the vulture began to dispute together, and the relations did not know what to do. Then the great god Çaṅkara, at the instigation of his wife Umā, came, with eyes full of pitying tears and said to the men: „I am the bountiful, varada, Çaṅkara“. And the men said: „Give our child life“. And the god bestowed life for a hundred years on the child, and he also gave the vulture and the jackal something with which to satisfy their hunger.

Together with this may be mentioned those places where Mahādeva is described as being gay and fond of music, singing and dancing. In XII,<sup>10365</sup> he is called *samhr̥ṣṭa*, the joyful, <sup>10367</sup> *gītavaditracālin*, acquainted with song and music, *nartanaçīla*, devoted to dancing and to imitating drum music with the mouth, *mukhavāditravādin*. And his followers are just as merry (XIII,<sup>1396</sup>).

I think it most proper to place Çiva as Brahmacārin and practiser of penances under this the gentle side of his nature. In XIII,<sup>6396</sup> he is said to be *jaṭilo brahmacārī ca lokānām hitākāmyayā*, one who goes with uncombed hair and practises chastity because he wishes mankind's welfare, in VII,<sup>2879</sup> that he is *muṇḍa*, shaved, in VII,<sup>3464</sup> he is called *tapasaṁ yoni*, the womb of penance, in XII,<sup>12331</sup> Mahādeva is said to have undertaken heavy penances on Himavat, according to VII,<sup>2858</sup> he is *valkalājīnavāsas* clothed in bark and skins, in XII,<sup>12335</sup> it is said that he stood on one foot for a 1000 years, in X,<sup>253</sup> he is called *çmaçānavāsin*, he who lives at

crematories, in XII,<sup>10970</sup> citibhasmapriya, he who is fond of ashes from the funeral pile, and kapālahasta, he who holds a skull in his hand, XIII,<sup>6205</sup> reads thus:

Medhānveṣi mahim kṛtsnam  
 vicarāmy-anīṣaṁ sadā  
 na ca medhyataram kiñcit  
 cmaṇād iha laxyate. ~

o: Seeking a fit offering place I wander ceaselessly over the whole earth, and there can be no better spot for that than the churchyard.

Durgā, Īiva's wife, has the same double character as her husband, and many of her qualities seem to be the same as his, so that she consequently appears as the feminine side of his nature.

According to VI,<sup>808</sup> she is kantāravāsini, one who lives in trackless places, in VI,<sup>800</sup>. IV,<sup>198</sup> she is said to be fond of strife and of the Asura Mahiṣa's blood, and according to VI,<sup>808</sup>. IV,<sup>180</sup> she conquers Dānava's and Asura's in battle. She is called Kālī and Mahākālī, Kālī, the great Kālī, in VI,<sup>797</sup>, and in IV,<sup>198</sup> and in VI,<sup>808</sup> she is said to be the great (everlasting) sleep of all beings, mahānidrā dehinām.

On the other side she is Durgā, because she rescues from care and want:

Durgāt tārayase Durge  
 tat tvaṁ Durgā smṛtā janaiḥ,  
 kāntāresv-avasannānām  
 magnānāṁ ca mahāṇave  
 dasyubhir vā niruddhānām  
 tvaṁ gatih paramā nṛṇām. (IV.<sup>198</sup>.)

o: From want dost thou save, o Durgā,  
 therefore art thou called Durga by man;  
 for those who are lost in trackless places,  
 for those who are wrecked in the great ocean,  
 for those who are distressed by bad beings  
 for such people art thou the best refuge;

and in *Mṛcchakaṭikā* ed. Stenzler p. 170 we read:

Holy Durgā! be merciful, be merciful!

Let Carudatta be saved and thereby shew thy goodness towards the race of Candāla. See Edv. Brandes' translation of the *Clay Cart* p. 174.

Furthermore she is said to live on Vindhya (IV,<sup>195</sup>), on Mandara (VI,<sup>795</sup>). She is a daughter of Yaçodā (IV,<sup>179</sup>), she is descended from the cow-herd Nanda's lineage (VI,<sup>799</sup>. IV,<sup>179</sup>). and is a sister to Vāsudeva (IV,<sup>180</sup>). She has four faces and four arms (IV,<sup>185</sup>), wears a diadem, shining in all colours, and her emblem is a peacock's tail (IV,<sup>190</sup>).

### Çiva's Heroic Deeds.

Among Çiva's renowned deeds we mention the following:

1) First that concerning Gangā Bhāgīrathī (VI,<sup>325</sup>. XIII,<sup>1784</sup> foll.). Gangā is India's most sacred river, and those districts through which it flows are the holiest in the world. To live near it and bathe in its waters is sufficient alone to purify from all sin and conduct to heaven,<sup>1</sup> hundreds of offerings are not equal

---

<sup>1</sup> The holiness of the Gangā-river is acknowledged up to this day: when in 1881 the queen of the king of Siam was burnt on the funeral pile two silver pails with water from the Gangā were put on the pile.

in value to bathing in the Ganga. Even as snakes lose their poison at the mere sight of their enemy, the Garuda bird, so are you freed from all sin at the bare sight of the sacred stream. By bathing in Ganga you not only deliver yourself from sin but also help your forefathers (the Pitṛis). They who were just on the point of sinking into hell on account of their heavy sins, may be saved by the waters of Ganga. When one sees the river swarming with swans and other aquatic birds, its banks beautified by delightful pastures adorned by herds of cattle, then even Heaven loses its attraction, and by living on its banks one enjoys greater happiness than in Heaven.

Meruḥ samudrasya ca sarvaratnaḥ  
 saṅkhyōpalanam udakasya vāpi  
 cakṛaṁ vaktuṁ nōha Gaṅgājalānām  
 guṇākhyānaṁ paṇmatuṁ tathāiva (XIII.1886).

- o One may perhaps be able to count the stones of Mount Meru, and perhaps measure the water in the ocean with all its pearls, but to measure all the virtues of Gangā's water is impossible.

Ganga was Himavat's eldest daughter. Her younger sister was named Umā. Concerning Gangā the following event is related (Rāmāyaṇa I, 40-43, Bombay ed. 1888. Mahābh III.881).

King Sāgara in Ayodhyā had 60,000 sons. While they were searching once for a horse that had been stolen from a sacrifice of horses, they met the sage Kapila. They accused him of having stolen the missing horse, and in consequence he, in his anger, transformed them to ashes. Only by the aid of Ganga's holy waters

could they again come to life. It was Sāgara's great-great-grandson, Bhagīratha who at last succeeded in bringing the stream Ākāṣa-Gaṅgā, Vyoma-Gaṅgā, (Air-Ganges, Heaven-Ganges), down from heaven. and its violence was only restrained by Çiva receiving it in the curls of his hair. This tale is often referred to in Mahābhārata, thus it is said in VI, 225:

Tām dhārayām āsa tadā  
durdharām parvatair api  
çatām varṣasahasrāṇām  
çirasāiva Pinākadhṛk

o: Her, who is difficult to bear even by mountains,  
bore after this the holder of Pināka (Çiva) on his  
head for a hundred thousand years, and in V, 222:

Atra Gaṅgām Mahādevah  
patantīm gaganūc cyutām  
pratigrhya dadau loke  
mānuṣe, brahmavittama

o: Here Mahādeva received the down-pouring, from  
heaven sent Gaṅgā (Ākāṣa-Gaṅgā, Vyoma-Gaṅgā),  
and gave her to the world of man, o thou who is full  
of Brahmaknowledge,

and in III, 2646:

Eṣā Bhāgīrathī puṇyā  
devagandharvasevitā  
vāteritā patākēva  
virājati nabhastale  
Pratāryamāṇā kūṭeṣu  
yathānimmeṣu nityaçaḥ  
çilātaleṣu santrastā

pannagendravadhūr iva  
 Daxinām vai diḡam sarvām  
 plāvayantī ca mātṛvat  
 pūrvam Çambhor jaṭābhraṣṭā  
 samudramahiṣī priyā.

- o: That holy Bhāgīrathī, who is worshipped by gods and Gandharva's shines far and wide over the heavens like a pennant fanned by the wind, it is perpetually conducted downwards over the lower mountain tops, lying like a serpent king's mistress, trembling on the rocks, she, the dear queen of the sea overflows all the southern district (nourishing it) like a mother after having first streamed from Çambhu's (Çiva's) hair. See further III,<sub>10907</sub>. XIII,<sub>1880</sub>.

2) Daxa's offer or Çiva's wrath. After Kṛta-Yuga's expiration the gods wished to institute an offering and consequently made preparations for the same in accordance with the instructions of the Veda's. Prajāpati-Daxa, a son of Pracetas (XIX,<sub>12214</sub>), undertook the sacrifice and performed it on Himavat, in that place where Gangā bursts forth from the mountains; but the gods themselves decided who should have a part of the sacrifice. Not knowing Rudra intimately, they did not give him anything. So Rudra went angrily to the place of sacrifice and took his bow with him. Instantly the mountains began to shake, the wind left off blowing, the fire would not burn, the stars glimmered in fear, the sun lost its glory and the moon its beauty, and all the air was enveloped in thick darkness. Then the gods were frightened. Çiva shot right through the sacrifice, which in the shape of a hart took flight to heaven

together with Agni. When the sacrifice had vanished the gods lost their senses and all things were obscured. Āiva in his wrath broke Savitar's (the sun's) arms and Pūṣan's teeth, and tore Bhaga's eyes out with his bow. Then the gods and the different parts of the offering took flight, and when Āiva had driven them all away, he laughed. But when a word spoken by the immortals rent his bow-string, the gods immediately sought the bowless deity and tried to appease him. His temper softened, Mahādeva threw his anger into the sea, gave Bhaga his eyes, Savitar his arms and Pūṣan his teeth again, and order was once more restored. From that time Āiva was allowed the melted butter as his part of the sacrifice.

Thus this tale is related in its simplest form in X,<sup>786</sup>.

In close conformity with this is the story in VII,<sup>9516</sup>. A more elaborate and, apparently, later description is found in XII,<sup>10272</sup> foll. and XIX,<sup>12212</sup> foll. There are a number of references to the myth in different parts of the Mahābhārata, for Ex. III,<sup>1027</sup>. X,<sup>253</sup>. XIII,<sup>7468</sup> etc., likewise in Rāmāyaṇa.

3) Kāma's Incorporeity. Kāma (from kam, to love), also called Manmatha, he who confuses the mind, Madana the intoxicating, Kandarpa the proud? (conf. Kathā-Sarit-S, Tawney's transl. vol. I, p. 155) and Anaṅga the Incorporeal, is the god of love, who according to XIX,<sup>270</sup>,

Gandharvāpsarasānāṁ cāiva (read: ca)

Kāmadevaṁ tathā prabhuṁ

is lord over Gandharva's and Apsarase's.

It is related of him that once, while Āiva was rapt

in prayer, he tried to excite his love for Pārvatī, so that he (Çiva) might beget a son who should be able to overthrow the Dāitya Tāraka, who had conquered all the world. But Çiva was offended at the interruption to his devotions, and with a single glance of his eye he turned Kāma to ashes, see Kālidāsa's Kumāra-Sambhava 3. sarga. This incident is referred to in XII between v. 6975 and 6980, where it says:

Kāmam abhivartamānam anaṅgatvena çamaṁ anayat  
o: He overpowered Kāma who attacked him, by rendering him incorporeal. In I, 6988 it says:

Anaṅgena kṛte doṣe  
nōmaṁ garhitum arhasi  
o: If it is Anaṅga's fault  
then you ought not to blame her.

In I, 7020 it is said:

Dṛṣṭvāiva tām Arjunasya  
Kandarpah samajāyata  
o: When Arjuna saw her, he fell in love with her.

In III, 2088, it is said of Nala:

Kandarpa iva rūpeṇa  
mūrtimān abhavat svayaṁ.  
o: In personal beauty he was Kandarpa personified;  
and in III, 2131:

Atha devāḥ pathi Nalaṁ  
dadṛçur bhūtaḥ sthitaṁ  
sākāḍ iva sthitaṁ mūrtyā  
Manmathaṁ rūpasampadā.  
o: Then the gods saw Nala standing on the ground in form and beauty Manmatha to the life.  
4) Bhaga's eyes. Çiva is often named as the



one who killed Bhaga, and the putting out of Bhaga's eyes is particularly referred to; thus he is designated in VII,<sup>9598</sup> Bhagaghna, in II,<sup>402</sup> Bhaganetrahau. in X,<sup>349</sup> Bhaganetrahara, in III,<sup>1624, 15857</sup> Bhagane-tranipātana, and in XIII,<sup>7475</sup> it is said:

Bhagasya nayane kruddhah  
prahārena vyaçātayat.

o: With one blow he in his wrath destroyed Bhaga's eyes.

5) The Asura Andhaka is also often spoken of as being killed by Çiva (VII,<sup>2876, 9462</sup>. XII,<sup>10857</sup>. XIII,<sup>908</sup>).

6) The destruction of the three fortresses, Tripura, Çiva's most remarkable exploit, is connected with the war between the gods and the Asuras, in which he and his son Kārtikeya (III,<sup>14509</sup>) took an active part.

Asurāṇām purāṇy-āsaṃśa  
trīṇi vīryavatām divi:  
ūyasaṃ rujataṃ cāiva  
sāuvarṇam api cāparam,  
Nāçakat tāni Maghavā  
bhettuṃ sarvāyudhair api,  
atha sarve Mahārudraṃ  
jagmuḥ çaraṇam arditāḥ. VII,<sup>9555</sup>. XIII,<sup>7182</sup>.

For the mighty Asura's had three fastnesses in heaven, one of iron, one of silver, and one of gold. Vidyunmālī ruled in the first, Tārakāxa in the second, Kamalāxa in the third. Even Maghavat (Indra) with all his weapons could not conquer them. Then the gods had recourse to Rudra and said: protect the three worlds and destroy the city of the Dāitya's. And Çiva agreed to

this, burnt the three fortresses (conf. XIII,7482. VII,9555. VIII,1102, 1569) and exterminated the Dānava's.

He is therefore called Tripurāntakara (II,754, 1641), Tripurārdana (III,14521), Tripuraghna (XII,10357), Tripuraghātin (X,255).

7) The myth of the teacher of the Asuras, the great thinker Uçanas in Mahādeva's stomach, related in XII,10677, is just as fantastic and absurd as a similar story in I,3183 foll. in which it is the disciple who comes out of his teacher Uçana's stomach.

#### K. The Sādhya's and

#### L. The Siddha's

are often named in the Mahābhārata, but without any further particulars. They are doubtless a kind of perfect, siddha, blessed spirits.

According to VI,264 the Siddha's dwell mostly in the glorious, sacred Uttara-Kuru-land which is described as follows:

Daxinena tu Nilasya  
Meroh pārçve tathōttare  
Uttarāḥ Kuravo rājan  
punyāḥ Siddhanisevitāḥ,  
Tatra vṛxā madhuphalā  
nityapuṣpaphalopamāḥ  
puṣpāṇi ca sugandhīni  
rasavanti phalāni ca,  
Sarvakāmaphalās tatra  
kecid vṛxā janādhipa  
apare xīriṇo nāma  
vṛxās tatra narādhipa,

Ye raxanti sadā xīraṇi  
 ṣaḍrasaṇ cōmrtopamaṇi  
 vastrāṇi ca prasūyante  
 phaleśv-ābharaṇāni ca,  
 Sarvā maṇimayī bhūmih  
 sūxmakāñcanabālukā,  
 maṇiratnanibhaṇi ramyaṇi  
 vajravāidūryasannibhaṇi  
 Bhūbhūgaṇi dr̥cyate tatra  
 padmarāgasamaprabhaṇi,  
 sarvartusukhasaṇsparṇā  
 nispaṇkā ca janādhipa,  
 Puṣkarīṇyaḥ cūbhaḥ tatra  
 sukhasparṇā manoharāḥ,  
 Devalokacyutāḥ sarve  
 jāyante tatra mānaḥ  
 Çuklābhijanasampunnāḥ  
 sarve supriyadarṇaṇi,  
 mithunāni ca jāyante  
 strīyaç cāpsarasopamāḥ,  
 Teṣāṇi te xīrīnāṇi xīraṇi  
 pivanty-amrtasannibhaṇi,  
 mithunaṇi jāyante kāle  
 saman tatra pravardhate  
 Tulyarūpaguṇopetaṇi  
 samaveṇaṇi tathāiva ca  
 evaṇ evānurūpaṇi ca  
 cakravākasamaṇi prabho,  
 Nīlāmayāç ca te lokā  
 nityaṇi muditamānasāḥ  
 daçavarṣasahasrāṇi  
 daçavarṣaçaṭāṇi ca

Jīvanti te mahārāja  
 na cānyonyam jāhaty-uta,  
 bhāruṇḍa nāma cakunās  
 tīkṣnatuṇḍā bhayānakāḥ  
 Tān niharantiha mṛtān  
 dariṣu praxipanti ca,  
 Uttarāḥ Kuravo rājan  
 vyākhyātās te samāsataḥ.

- o. 'On the south of the Nīla mountain and the northern side of Meru are the sacred Northern Kurus, O king, which are the residence of the Siddhas. The trees there bear sweet fruits, and are always covered with fruits and flowers. All the flowers (there) are fragrant, and the fruits of excellent taste. Some of the trees, again, O king, yield fruits according to (the) will (of the plucker). There are again some other trees, O king, that are called milk-yielding. These always yield milk and the six different kinds of food of the taste of Amṛita itself. Those trees also yield cloths and in their fruits are ornaments (for the use of man). The entire land abounds with fine golden sands. A portion of the region there, extremely delightful, is seen to be possessed of the radiance of the ruby or diamond, or of the lapis lazuli or other jewels and gems. All the seasons there are agreeable and nowhere does the land become miry, O king. The tanks are charming, delicious, and full of crystal water. The men born there have dropped from the world of the celestials. All are of pure birth and all are extremely handsome in appearance. There twins (of opposite sexes) are born and the women

resemble Apsaras in beauty. They drink the milk, sweet as Amrita, of those milk-yielding trees (already mentioned). And the twins born there (of opposite sexes) grow up equal. Both possessed of equal beauty, both endued with similar virtues, and both equally dressed, both grow up in love like, O monarch, a couple of chakravākas. The people of that country are free from illness and are always cheerful. Ten thousand and ten hundred years they live, O king, and never abandon one another. A class of birds called Bhārunda, furnished with sharp beaks and possessed of great strength, take them up when dead and throw them into mountain caves. I have now described to thee, O king, the Northern Kurus briefly. (Roy.)

#### M. The Vālakhilya's

are very small Rṣi's who in XIII,<sup>4121</sup> are said to have their origin from Kuṣa-grass. See further concerning them XIII,<sup>6188</sup>.

#### N. The Vasu's.

The word vasu comes from *vas*, to light, to shine, and means therefore lighting shining. In XII,<sup>10215</sup> the Vasu's are called amitānjasas.

There are 8 Vasu's and they are sons of Prajāpati Manu (XII,<sup>7587</sup>), but according to XII,<sup>7540</sup> they are sons of Dharma (Yama). They are named in I,<sup>2582</sup> as follows.

Dharo Dhruvaç ca Somaç ca  
Ahaç câiva Anilo 'nalah  
Pratyūsaç ca Prabhāsaç ca  
Vasavo 'stāv iti smṛtāh,

and after this verse all the descendents of the Vasu's are enumerated. In XIII,7094 the same verse is found with Sāvitra instead of Aha, and in Harivaṃṣa 152 Āpas instead of Aha.

The Vasu's became, after being cursed by Vaciṣṭha (I,3811), on earth the children of Gangā and King Qāntanu (I,3887), but were saved back to heaven by Gangā.

### 1. Agni.

Agni was the lord of the Vasu's (XII,1199. VII,159).

His most frequently occurring names are Pāvaka, Jātavedas, Hutāṇa, and Vaiṣvanara. A number of his other names are mentioned in II,1146, and in III,14130 the names of many different kinds of fire are to be found, but in III,10002 it is said that there are (only) five (sorts) of fire, and in XIII,1006 ten sorts.

Some of these names refer to Agni as being the god of sacrifices, as f.i. Hutāṇa, Havyavāhna, Vahni, Pavaka, the greater part express the different attributes to be found in fire, as Jvalana, Vibhāvasu, Citrabhānu, Bhūritejas, Çikhiṇ, Piṅgeṇa, Hiranyakṛt, Plavaṅga, Anala.

His person is merely described by symbolic expressions as Kavi suvarṇavarṇa (XIII,7220).

He is said to be a son of Brahmā:

Brahmaṇo hi prasūto 'gnir. XIII,4168.

His wife is Svāha (Çivā), a daughter of Daxa (V,3850, 14300. III,14514).

His son Skanda (III,14815. XII 12920) is also called Kumāra and Kārtikeya, and the reason he has been given these names, is related in XIII,4097. The myth

concerning his origin etc. is to be found in III<sup>11298</sup>; cfr. IX<sup>3450</sup>. XIII<sup>4066, 4190</sup>.

Skanda's wife was Devasenā (III<sup>11150</sup>).

Skanda has 6 faces, he is śaṣmukha, (VII<sup>3154</sup>), śaḍānana (Rāmāyaṇa I.<sup>37, 128</sup>), and 12 ears, eyes, hands (XII<sup>4500</sup>) and feet, but only 1 neck and 1 stomach. He is dressed in everlasting red clothes (III<sup>14138</sup>) and rides on a peacock (XIII<sup>871</sup>).

✓ His banner which was given him by Agni, flames high on his chariot, red as the fire at the destruction of the world.

✓ His spear never misses its mark (XIII<sup>4214</sup>), and as often as it is thrown, it returns to him again after having killed enemies by thousands (III<sup>11618</sup>). As an instance of his immense strength is related in XII<sup>12320</sup> that he once when a boy in contempt for the three worlds thrust his spear into the ground, saying: if there is any stronger than I, then let him pull this spear out or at all events shake it. When the three worlds heard this challenge they trembled and said: who can loosen this lance? Then Viṣṇu took lightly hold of the lance with his left hand and moved it, and immediately all the earth shook with its mountains, forests and seas, and when the Dāitya Prahlaḍa, Hiranyakaśipu's son, tried to pull the spear up, he could not accomplish the feat, but fainted away. With his arrows Skanda split / the rock Krāuñca in Himavat (III<sup>14438</sup>). He is the commander in chief of the army, senāpati (IX<sup>3499</sup>. XIII<sup>4180, 4218</sup>. III<sup>14434, 14541</sup>). He is named Pāvaki (III<sup>1576, 14378</sup>) after his father, Pāvaka, the purifying Agni; and as Īiva's adopted son he is also called Rudrasūna (III<sup>14438</sup>). In III<sup>14330</sup> 31 of his names are enumerated

very few of which characterise him as a war-god. Concerning his deeds we must mention that, in the warring of the gods against the Asura's, he killed Maṇiṣa (III,11610) and Tāraka (XIII,4181), by which he re-established Surendra, the Indra of the Sura's, in the supremacy (XIII,4215).

Agni is most often accompanied by Vāyu, the wind, (I,7682. III,3896), who is called his friend (V,3812).

Āgneya astra is mentioned in VII,9406.

As the personification of fire Agni has a double character because he partly represents the sacrificial fire, partly the cosmical fire.

1. The first is clearly shown from passages where he is called Hutuṣa (II,1180), Hutabhuḥ (I,924), Devanam mukha (I,927. II,1115), Devatānām pitṛnāṇ ca mukha (I,920).

Tvam Agne sarvadevanām  
mukhaṁ, tvam asi havyavāṭ. V.488.  
Vedoktena vidhānena  
mayi yad dhūyate haviḥ  
devatāḥ pitarāḥ cāiva  
tena tṛptā bhavanti vāi,  
Devatāḥ pitarāḥ cāiva  
bhūñjante mayi yad dhutaṁ,  
devatānām pitṛnāṇ ca  
mukham etad ahaṁ smṛtaṁ. I,91

o: Thou, o Agni, art the mouth of all the gods, thou art the one who brings the offering (to the gods); the butter that is offered in me according to the rules prescribed in the Veda's, with that are the gods and the ancestors satisfied, the gods



and the Pitṛ's enjoy that which is offered through me, therefore I am called the mouth of the gods and the pitṛ's.

Agni upholds the sacrificial ceremonies (I, 929). He purifies from all sin, therefore he is called Pāvaka (II, 1146). And he is the sacrifice itself (II, 1145. V, 486).

2. The second clearly appears from many passages, as f. i. V, 485 where it is said of Agni:

Tvām āhur ekam Kavayas.  
tvām āhur trividham punah,  
tvayā tyaktaṁ jagac cêdam  
sadyo nacyed Dhutācana (cfr. I, 8855).

o: The poets say, thou art one, and again they say, thou art threefold, deserted by thee this world would at once be ruined, o Hutācana;

then this trinity is explained in I, 929 where it says:

Lokānām iha sarvesaṁ  
tvam kartā cānta eva ca  
tvam dhārayasi lokāns trin  
kriyānān ca pravartakah.

o: Thou art the creator of all worlds, and also the end of them, thou upholdest the three worlds, and promotest the work of offering.

Agni is the lightning in the clouds (I, 8857. V, 488). He hides himself in the interior of the Çamī-wood (IX, 2746), and although he fears water as his natural opposite (V, 490). yet he is said to have originated in the water (XII, 6778) and to be the foster of water, apām garbha, yes even that he is in the water (III, 14208) whilst he on the other hand is said to be

the real cause of the existence of water (II,<sup>1150</sup>, III,<sup>14212</sup>, XII,<sup>8516</sup>), and there is laid stress upon the fact that the waters are deposited in him (V,<sup>489</sup>). The rivers are called the mothers of fire-places (III,<sup>14233</sup>). Mudikī, the dear wife of the fire Saha, lived in the water (III,<sup>14208</sup>). Saha enters the water (III,<sup>14214</sup>).

Agni is hidden in the interior of all beings (I,<sup>880</sup>, 885. V,<sup>489</sup>) and in consequence he knows everything:

Na te 'ty-aviditaṃ kiñcit  
triṣu lokeṣu Pāvaka. V,<sup>589</sup>.

and is called Jātavedas (II,<sup>1146</sup>).

### The Deeds of Agni.

#### a. Agni helps king Nīla.

Agni had fallen in love with king Nīla's beautiful daughter who generally took care of her father's sacred fire. And Agni, desiring her for his wife, went one day in the shape of a brāhmaṇa to king Nīla and wooed the girl. After some opposition king Nīla consented and gave her to him. Then Agni favoured him and helped the king in his strife with Sahadeva. The latter's chariots, horses, elephants and himself suddenly burst into flames, and Sahadeva did not know what to do. And the same thing happened to all those princes who tried to subdue king Nīla, they were powerless against him and were all devoured by Hutaga (II,<sup>1180</sup> foll.).

#### b. Agni is cursed by Bhr̥gu.

Bhr̥gu's wife Pulomā became pregnant. One day while Bhr̥gu was absent the Rāxasa Puloma came to

Bhṛgu's dwelling. Pulomā received him hospitably. The Rāxasa was seized with desire for Pulomā and determined to abduct her. Pulomā had formerly been betrothed to Puloma, but had since been lawfully given by her father to Bhṛgu. Now Puloma carried her off. But when Bhṛgu heard that Agni had disclosed her to the Rāxasa who by the way did not know that she was Bhṛgu's wife, then he cursed Agni (I, 876). The result was that Agni withdrew from all sacrifices and would not take part in them (IX, 3745) and disappeared. Then the gods became alarmed, sought zealously for him and found him at last in the Ṣamī-tree. Then Agni returned, the sacrifices were resumed, and all mankind, Rsi's and gods rejoiced.

## 2. Vāyu.

Vāyu from vā, to blow, is also called Vata (I, 5908). III, 11914), Marut, Anila from an, to breathe, and Pāvana from pū, to cleanse (XII, 5850), of which names the three first are doubtless originally expressions for the violent and destructive qualities of the wind, the two last for the gentle and beneficial. The names, however, seem later to have been used indiscriminately. Conf. under Īiva and Viṣṇu.

Āgacchan puruṣo Vāyur  
mayā viṣṭambhito balāt  
bhañjan drumān parvatāmṇ ca  
yac cānyad apī kiñcana — — —  
na hi Vāyor balenāsti  
bhūtām tulyabalam kvacit,  
Indro Yamo Vaiṣravaṇo  
Varuṇaś ca jaleṣvarah

nāite 'pi tulya Marutah

kim punas tvañ vanapate. XII,528.

- o: When the doughty Vāyu came I stopped him with night, although he easily breaks trees and splits mountains and anything else of the kind, for there is not anywhere any other being that can be compared with Vāyu in strength, Indra Yama Vāicravāṇa and Varuṇa, the Lord of the waters, even these are not equal to Marut (in power) much less thou o tree.

'Tato 'uulasukho Vāyus

pravavau devaveçmasu

lṣṭagandhah sukhasparçah

sarvendriyasukhāvahah. XII,8118.

- o: Then Anala's friend Vāyu, full of a delightful fragrance and pleasant to the touch, blew through the dwellings of the gods, filling all senses with pleasure.

Vāyu is often spoken of as a friend of Agni. Conf. above.

### 3. Soma.

Soma is one of the most frequently occurring names in the MBh. for the Moon (I,2582. III,1715. IX,3011. XIII,7211). More rarely it is named Candramas (XII,4499). Candra, the luminous (IX,221), Gaçin having a hare (as emblem) III,2187, Indu (I,2577) and Jāyantu (XIII,7092).

The Moon was made the ruler over the naxatra's XII,4499.

Soma's father was Atrī (XIII,7213), cfr. under Varuṇa.

He was married to 27 daughters of Daxa prajāpati

(I, 2580. XII, 7511). The story of this marriage is found in a more elaborate form in IX, 2013 follow. I give the shorter tale in Vol. III p. 833, which runs as follows:

Daxasya yā vai dubitarah ṣaṣṭir āsan, tabhyah Kaçya-pāya trayodaça prādūt daça Dharmāya daça Manave saptaviṃṣatim Indave, tāsū tulyāsu Naxatrākhyāṁ gatāsu Somo Rohiṇyām abhyadhikāṁ prītimān abhūt tatas tāḥ ṣiṣṭāḥ patnya irṣāvatyaḥ pituh samīpaṁ gatvā imam arthaṁ ṣaṣaṁsuḥ: Bhagavaṁ asmāsu tulyaprabhāvāsu Somo Rohiṇīm pratyadhikāṁ bhajatīti. So 'bravīd: yaxmānam āviçyata iti Daxaṣāpāt Somaṁ rājānam yaxmā viveça, sa yaxmaṇāviṣṭo Daxam agamat. Daxaṣ cānam abravīt: na samaṁ vartayasīti; tatrarṣayaḥ Somam abruvan: xiyase yaxmanā paçcimasyaṁ diçi samudre Hiranya-sarasatīrthaṁ, tatra gatvā ūtmānam abhiṣecasyēti; athā-gacchat. Somaḥ tatra Hiranyasarasatīrthaṁ gatvā cātmanah secanam akarot snūtvā cātmānam pāpmano mocayām āsa, tatra cānvabhāsitas tīrthe yadi Somaḥ tadā prabhṛti ca tīrthaṁ tat Prabhāsam iti nāmnā khyātāḥ babbhūva, tacchāpād adyāpi Somaḥ amāvāsyāntarāsthāḥ pāuṇḍamāsīmātre 'dhiṣṭhitāḥ meghalekhāpraticohannaṁ vapur darçayati meghasadrçaṁ varṇam agamat tad asya ṣaṣalaxma vimalam abhavat.

- o: Daxa's daughters were 60 in number, of these he gave 13 to Kaçyapa, 10 to Dharma (Yama), 10 to Manu, 27 to Indu, amongst these who were all equally gifted, and were known as naxatra's, Soma felt a passionate love for Rohiṇī alone, therefore the others were envious and went to their father and said: o most reverend one, although we are all equal in descent still Soma seeks Rohiṇī's society most, Daxa said: sickness shall seize him, thereupon king Soma

was seized with illness on account of Daxa's curse; overcome by disease he went to Daxa, and Daxa said to him: thou dost not treat thy wives equally well, thou art not just (towards thy wives). The sages said to Soma: thou art wasted by sickness, in the western district, by the sea, there is a bathing place called Hiranya-saras, go there and bathe. Thereupon Soma journeyed there and having arrived at Hiranya-tīrtha he bathed there and having bathed he freed himself from sin, and as Soma beamed there in the bath darting rays of light, then the bathing place became afterwards renowned under the name of Prabhāsa. On account of the curse Soma is up to the present day hidden in the night until the first quarter, but when the moon is at its full, it shows a body that is covered by a line of clouds, it has then a mark which clearly resembles a hare.

A myth related to the story of Soma tells how Rāhu tried to swallow both sun and moon. See above.

In XIII,<sup>6761</sup> Rohiṇī is called Çaṇin's pious wife.

Soma's daughter Bhadrā was married to Utathya, but was stolen by Varuṇa (XIII,<sup>7341</sup>), see above.

His daughter Jyotsnākālī was married to Puṣkara, Varuṇa's handsome and intellectual son (V,<sup>3533</sup>).

In V,<sup>3804</sup> it is said about the moon:

Atra pītṛā samastān vāi  
Varuṇasya rasāms tu ṣaṭ  
jāyate taruṇaḥ Somaḥ  
ṣukrasyādāu tamisrahā.

o: Here having drunk all Varuṇas sex juices the infant Soma is born who kills darkness in the beginning of the light (half-moon).

#### O. Vidyādhara's.

The Vidyādhara's are aerial spirits who live on the top of the mountain Krāuñca in Himavat (IX, 2706).

When warriors fight with one another the Vidyādhara's are said to send a rain of flowers down on them (VII, 3716).

Their chief is Cakradharman (II, 108).

- -

### III. YAXA'S.

The word yaxa is probably only a differentiated form of raxas as Yaxa's and Rāxasa's are very often mentioned together, see I, 66. 7652, 2542. VI, 1227, 1130 follow, and as the Yaxa's are said to have seceded from the Rāxasa's with Kuvera at their head, see below. Kuvera was a brother of Rāvaṇa, the prince of the Rāxasa's.

The Yaxa's are generally identified with the Guhyaka's (V, 7480. VI, 540. XII, 10216), yet these are sometimes mentioned apart from the Yaxa's (I, 35).

The origin of the Yaxa's is stated in very different ways.

The function of the Yaxa's is to protect their prince Kuvera, Dhaneçvara, the God of riches:

Yaxottama Yaxapatiñ Dhaneçam

raxanti vai prāsagadāsihastālī Hariv. 11112.

o: The foremost Yaxa's protect the Yaxa-prince, the Lord of riches, armed with javelins, clubs and swords,

and to guard his fortress and his garden, see below. and compare the beginning of Kālidāsa's Meghadūta.

Kuvera, the God of Riches.

His Lincage.

Kuvera belongs originally to the Asura's, his father was the Brahman sage and muni Viçravas, and his mother's name was Ilavilā. His three half-brothers were Rūvāṇa, the Raxas's mighty king of Ceylon. Kumbhakarṇa and Vibhīṣana, and his half-sister Çūrpanakha, who are all sons and daughters of Kāinkasi (Ram. VII, 9, 39—45, in another form in M. III, 17589). Kinkasi was a daughter of the Rāxas Sumāli, who lived in Patala when Kuvera reigned in Laṅka. Kuvera's wife was named Riddhi (M. XIII, 6750) and his son Nalakūvara (M. II, 100. III, 17586. IX, 2757).

His Names.

Kuvera is doubtless = kuvīra and means therefore the same as kinnara and kimpurusa and kupurusa = what a (wretched or hideous) man! He is described as being with three legs and only eight teeth (Wilson's Dict.). Others define the word as a possessive compound with the definition: he who has a hideous body, as, vera, it is opined, means body. Upon this we have however only later lexicographers' authority, but no examples from literature.



In the Mahābhārata and Rāmāyaṇa the following names are used for Kuvera: as a son of Viṣṇavas he is named Vāiṣṇavaṇa (M. III,<sub>11633</sub>. II,<sub>381</sub>. R. IV,<sub>13</sub>. 23). After his mother, Ilavilā he is called Āilavilā (M. V,<sub>3840</sub>), after his principal city Alakādhīpa, Alaka's ruler (M. IX,<sub>383</sub>), after his subjects: Kinnareṣvara, Guhyādhīpa (M. III,<sub>11894</sub>), Yaxarāj (R. IV,<sub>43</sub>. 23). Yaxādhīpa (Nala 13. 23), Yaxarājan (M. IX,<sub>2755</sub>), Rāxaseṣvara (M. III,<sub>15890</sub>), Rāxasādhīpati (M. II,<sub>110</sub>. III,<sub>11705</sub>), Yaxaraxodhipati (M. X,<sub>10666</sub>) o: Lord over Kinnaras. Guhyakas, Yaxas, Raxas. As a mighty king he is titled Rājarāja (M. III,<sub>11358</sub>. Meghadūta 7), king of kings. As the god of riches he is called Dhanada (M. V,<sub>3831</sub>. XII,<sub>10668</sub>. R. VI,<sub>11</sub>. 26), Dhanapati (M. XIII,<sub>1097</sub>. III,<sub>11768</sub>. Meghadūta 7), Dhanādhīpa, Dhanādhīpati (M. III,<sub>11766</sub>, <sub>11768</sub>), Dhanādhyaxa (R. VII,<sub>11</sub>. 7), Dhaneṣvara, dhananām iṣvara (M. III,<sub>1672</sub>, <sub>11409</sub>. XII,<sub>2819</sub>, <sub>7562</sub>. XIII,<sub>1069</sub>. R. VII,<sub>11</sub>. 49). Nidhipa (M. XII,<sub>7562</sub>), Vittapāla (R. VII,<sub>11</sub>. 26). Vitteṣa (R. VII,<sub>11</sub>. 27), and it is said that his body is made of gold (M. III,<sub>1678</sub>).

Kuvera is driven from Ceylon.

That king of kings, borne on men's shoulders (M. III,<sub>15902</sub>) and honoured by all gods (R. III,<sub>43</sub>. 21) reigned first in Laṅkā, but his brother Rāvaṇa with the ten heads (daṣānana R. VII,<sub>11</sub>. 27, daṣagrīva M. III,<sub>15920</sub>), excited by his grandfather Sumālī picked a quarrel with him saying: „This lovely city belonged once to the Rāxasa's with Sumālī at their head, give it therefore back again“. And he conquered him in the battle, drove him out of Laṅkā and even deprived him of the chariot

Pushpaka which Brahmā had given him (M. III,<sup>1588c</sup> foll.). Followed by Gandharva's, Yaxa's, (some)<sup>1</sup> Rāxasa's and Kimpuruṣa's and accompanied by his pious (dharmātman III,<sup>1592a</sup>, dharmiṣṭha 11411) brother Vibhiṣaṇa, who as a reward for his fidelity was made Commander-in-Chief of the Rāxasa and Yaxa armies (M. III,<sup>1592b</sup>, conf. III, p. 838?), Kuvera journeyed by the advice of his father, with wife, son and servant, with his chariots and his goods and chattels to Himālaya, to the balmy and beautiful mountain Gandhamādana and to Kāilāsa with the river Mandākinī, the most lovely of all streams, covered with fragrant golden lotuses, which shine like the sun. While Kuvera took up his abode in Himavat, Rāvaṇa marched with his cannibal Rāxasa's into the empty city of Laṅka (R. VII,<sup>11</sup>, 17), from where he afterwards attacked both Deva's and Dāitya's seized their treasures, and because he caused loud wailing and lamentation (rāvayāṁ āsa) he was called Rāvaṇa M. III,<sup>1592i</sup>).

### Himālaya.

The Himavat mountains hold the highest place amongst all the mountains in the world (M. XIII,<sup>1407</sup>), they are praised as being divine, holy and loved by the gods (M. III,<sup>1495</sup>) and they are protected by Rāxasa's and Piṣāca's (M. VIII,<sup>3104</sup>). From them the ascent is made, through the air, up to Svarga-heaven with the Nandana forest, the home of the inhabitants of heaven, the Deva's. The high Kuvera enjoys a fourth

---

<sup>1</sup> I have added 'some' before Rāxasa's because I assume that the Rāxasa's have formed two parties, viz: one that sided with Rāvaṇa and one that kept to his banished brother. Conf. also III,<sup>1454b</sup>.

part of Meru's treasures and he gives a sixteenth part to mankind.

South of Mount Nila and on the north side of Meru (M. VI,<sub>331</sub>) lies the holy northerly Kuru-land where the Siddhas dwell. The trees there are always in flowers and always bear fruit, and the flowers exhale a delicious odour and the fruits are luscious, and anybody can pluck as many flowers as he likes. Some of the trees give milk continuously, with six sorts of juice equal to Amrita, and others give raiment, and the fruit serves as ornaments. The lotus ponds are lovely, and the soil is strewn with fine gold sand and gleams with diamonds and other precious stones, the joys of all seasons rule here, and all those people who have fallen down from (or have lived their time out in) the world of the gods, are re-born here. (Cfr. *supra* p. 167.

#### Kuvera's land.

Among Himālaya's many great and small mountains Kuvera chose Kāilāsa (also called Hemakūṭa) (M. III,<sub>12310</sub>. VI,<sub>229</sub>, <sub>236</sub>, <sub>240</sub>. V,<sub>3840</sub>) and Gandhamādana (III,<sub>11000</sub>) as his favourite dwelling place. Gandhamādana darkens like a cloud in the sky. It is inhabited by hosts of Yaxa's, Gandharva's, Sura's and Brahma sages (M. III,<sub>11080</sub>), and with clouds on its sides it seems to dance with outspread wings (M. III,<sub>11091</sub>). The mountain has forests with different kinds of flowers, rivers and lakes with fresh golden lotuses, and with a swarm of swans, Kāraṇḍavas and Cakravākas in the lotus-filled river it resembles a wreath on the mountain's temples. Herds of wild elephants, timid antelopes

with grass in their mouths, buffalos, bears and leopards graze there (M. III,1117. V,2170). On Gandhamādana's summits Kuvera, the lord of Guhyakas' wanders at peace together with the Raxasa's and surrounded by hosts of Apsaras'es (M. VI,220). The Guhya's protect the mountain (M. VIII,2108). The whitish-yellow (R. IV 13, 20) Kāilāsa is 6 yojana's high (M. III,40830). and a gigantic jujube tree is found there. It is likewise covered with lovely woods, rivers, lakes and caves (M. III,12113),

Here Kuvera was installed by Brahmā himself (M. V,1810) in dominion over all riches (M. IX,2738 XII,4196) and over Raxasa's, Yaxa's and Gandharva's, and he rejoiced greatly (M. XII,1529).

At the entrance to Kāilāsa there is a golden gate (M. XIII,1112).

Kuvera's great forest, mahadvana, is called Nandana (M. II, Vayupuraṇa p. 358). His grove (udyana. vana) is called Citraratha (V,3891. R. VI,111, 11. M. III,11257. I,2876, 3282).

His river is the beautiful Mandakini (M. XIII,1112, 1113, 1560. R. III,5, 36. VII,11. 11), the first of rivers whose waters are decked with golden lotuses, that resemble the sun.

His lotus-lake, Nalinī or Jāmbūnada-saras, the golden lake (M. V,1813) is called Alakā (M. II,390). It is full of divine, fragrant, golden Sāugandhika lotuses and all sorts of aquatic birds, surrounded by lovely woods with thick trees and climbing plants. Its water is clear and cool, and has an ambrosial taste. It is guarded by Rāxasa's named Krodhavaça's with their king Maṇibhadra at their head (M. III,11451, 10826. XIII,1413. R. IV,13. 22. Nala 12 v. 130).

A bathing place is named after him (Kuvera) and is called tirtha Kāuvera (M. IX,<sup>2752</sup>).

His city, pura, āvāsa, ālaya, sudana, is called Alakā (Megh. v. 7) and himself after it Alaka's prince Alakādhipa (M. IX,<sup>380</sup>). It is embellished with golden houses, crystal palaces and entirely surrounded by a golden wall with doors and gates. Rows of flags and banners flutter in the wind, and dancing jesting women are seen everywhere (M. III,<sup>11897, 11753-51</sup>).

His palace, bhavana, which is built by Viçvakarman, shines like the white-yellow cloud and is edged with gold (R. IV, 13, 21. M. III,<sup>11852</sup>).

His assembly-hall, sabhā, which is built by himself on the strength of his great sacrificial power is 100 yojana's in length and 70 in breadth. It is as bright as the peaks of Kāilāsa, and its white shoon eclipses even the splendour of the moon. Borne by Guhyaka's it seems to float in the air. The heavenly palace is resplendent with lofty halls of gold. It glitters with coloured pearls, and is delightful with its divine fragrance. On a throne, which shines like the sun, sits in this hall the high Vāiçravaṇa in a dress with coloured ornaments, and with shining earrings. The throne and the throne footstool are covered with divine carpets. A cool refreshing breeze, which rushes through a forest of high Mandāra trees, and brings with it a delightful odour from clusters of Sāugandhika lotuses in Lake Alakā and from the Nandana forest, refreshes him. and innumerable hosts of Apsaras'es and Gandharva's worship the giver of riches and serve him with dance and song. There the Guhyaka's, Yaxa's, Rāxasa's, Piçāca's

Vidyadhara's gather, and all mountains and hills, impersonated, with Meru at their head, and Saṅkha and Padma, the greatest of all eminent treasures. Here Laxmī with Īiva and Umā come and many others (M. II,<sup>388</sup>).

His chariot, vāhana, vimāna, which was built by Viṣvakarman, is ornamented with painted edges and goes wherever one wishes, it is called Pushpaka (M. III,<sup>14646</sup>). It was given him by Brahmā together with the sway of all riches, divinity and immortality, suratva, amaratva, sovereignty as the world's guardian, loka-pālātva, friendship with Rudra and a son Nalakūvara (M. III,<sup>15886</sup>, 11776. IX,<sup>2756</sup>. R. III,<sup>15</sup>, 6). When Rāvana took away his chariot (see above) Kuvera cursed him using these words: „It shall not bear thee, but it shall bear him who shall overthrow thee in the strife, and thou shalt soon die because thou hast scoffed at me, thine elder brother“ (M. III,<sup>15622</sup>).

His favourite weapon, asta priya, is Antardhāna, a strong, sharp, shining weapon which lays the enemy low or forces him to take flight. With it Ṣaṅkara destroyed of yore Tripura and crushed the mighty Asura's (M. III,<sup>1702</sup>).

His favourite drink is honey, madhu, he has a jar full of it standing on the mountain Gandhamādana in an inaccessible chasm. It is guarded by poisonous serpents. If a mortal partook of it he would gain immortality, a blind man would recover his sight and an old man would be rejuvenated (M. V,<sup>2474</sup>).

Kuvera forms, it appears, an intermediate link between the cannibal Rāxasa's and the Surian

Deva's. He leaves the Troll's in Ceylon and goes to the gods on Himālaya and associates with them. He even becomes Qiva's friend. It is clear that among the Deva's Rudra is the one most closely united to him. As a proof of his admission to the celestial regions we may refer to his being called a Deva in the Rāmāyaṇa VII,<sup>11</sup>, 30, and in Manu V,<sup>96</sup> he is named amongst the Lokapāla's (Guardians of the world).

## APPENDIX TO KÜVERA.

India has long been looked upon as the cradle of fairy tales and legends, and such is indeed the case, for beside numbers of short folk-stories such as *Vetāla-pañcaviṃśati*, 25 Tales by a Ghost, *Çukasaptati*, 70 Tales by a Parrot, *Simhāsana-dvātriṃśat*, 32 Tales by the Images on Vikramāditya's Throne, and beside those found spread throughout the *Mahābhārata* and *Rāmāyana* and in fact in all the Indian literature with its commentaries, we have the following important collections of fables, fairy stories and tales; The *Jātaka*-book concerning the Transmigration of souls, from about 477 B. C., published by V. Fausbøll in 7 vols. 1877—97<sup>1</sup>; the *Pañcatantra*-book in 5 chap., by Viṣṇuçarman, from about 530 A. D. published first by Kosegarten 1848 since by Kielhoru and Bühler 1868—81. 2 ed. 1882<sup>2</sup>; *Hitopadeśa*, the Beneficial Instruction, published by, Carey 1804, by Schlegel and Lassen 1829—31, by P. Peterson 1887<sup>3</sup>; *Kathāsaritsāgara*, the Lake of

---

Of an English transl. by E. Cowell 4 vols. have appeared 1895—1901. <sup>1</sup> Transl. into German by Benfey 1—2 vols. 1859. by Fritze 1884, into French by Lancereau 1871, into Danish in extracts by Harald Rasmussen 1893. <sup>2</sup> Transl. into English by Wilkens 1787 into German by Max Müller 1844, Schönberg 1884, Fritze 1888, into French by Lancereau 1855.



Legend Streams by Somadeva, from about 1063, published by Brockhaus, 1839—66, and by Durgāprasāda 1889<sup>1</sup>; Kshemendra's *Avadāna Kalpalatā*, 1—2 vols. 1888—97. H. Jacobi, *Erzählungen in Māhārāshtri*, 1886. *Kathā Kosha* a Treasury of Tales, transl. by Tawney, 1895. (Or. Transl. Fund). *Die Āvaṣyaka-Erzählungen*. Herausgeg. von E. Leumann 1897. (In *Abhdl. für die Kunde des Morgenlandes*. Bd. 10).

To these must be added from more modern times. Frere, *Old Deccan Days; or Hindu Fairy Legends*, 1868; Stokes, *Indian Fairy Tales*; Lal Behari Day, *Folk-Tales of Bengal*, 1883; Steel and Temple, *Wide awake Stories*, Bombay 1884. Temple, *The Legends of the Panjāb*, 1—2 vols. 1884—85; Knowles, *Folk-Tales of Kashmir*, 1888; Swynnerton, *Indian Night's Entertainment, or Folk-Tales from the Upper Indus*. London 1892; and from the latest date many stories communicated in the periodical: *The Indian Antiquary*.

It can be proved that some of the old Indian tales have simply wandered through literature from east to west, to Persians, Hebrews, Arabians, Syrians, Greeks, Turks and into European Folk-literature of the middle ages, others have probably been transmitted and spread from land to land all over the world by word of mouth. But in all cases the greater part of the Folk-Tales, both on the whole and in many separate characteristics, point back to India as the land of their birth, and it is Theodor Benfey's great merit that he has proved this, in his thorough researches, in the introduction to

<sup>1</sup> Transl. into English by Tawney, 1—2 vols, 1880—84.

his translation of *Pañcatantra*. And when the old Greek authors, Herodot, Ktesias, Strabo and Ælian speak of gold digging ants, of grifins, og pigmies, of one-legged men, of others with dog's heads and the like, it is evident that these tales are only a reflection of the imaginative mind of India.

Some of the principal elements in the fables are gold, silver and precious stones. Who has not heard of Jason with the golden fleece, of Fafnir, who guards the gold on Gnita Heath, of the Asa's who throw golden dice on the plain of Ida, of Sif's golden hair, of the boar Goldbristle, of Goldmane, the golden ring Draupnir etc.: and who has not read Asbjørnsen's and Moe's fairy tales *Kari Trøstak*; *East of the Sun and West of the Moon*. The Maiden on the Glass Mountain, The three Sisters, who are taken into the mountain and similar goblin stories from all countries, in which precious metals play an important part.

In India we read of serpents (*nāga*, *sarpa*) in ant-hills full of gold (*Pañcatantra* III, 5, 10), of golden haṃsa's (*Pañcat.* III, 6; *Jātaka* Nr. 136), of the *Nāga* who makes a present of jewels to the king who saved its life (*Jātaka* Nr. 386), of the princess who will only marry one who has seen the golden city (*Kathā-Sarit-Sāgara* V, 24), of the golden lotuses (*Kathā-S.-S.* V, 25), of *Çiva*'s garden of golden trees with branches of jewels and flowers with clusters of pearls (*K.-S.-S.* IX, 52) and so forth.

How does it happen that precious metals and minerals play so important a part in India's tales (and therefore also in those originating from there). The

simple reason is because India has always been richly endowed with the same.

An early proof of this fact we gather from the records of the ancient Greeks. Thus Megasthenes relates that whilst the land on its surface bears all kinds of cultivated fruits, it has underneath numerous veins of all sorts of metals. for it is in possession of much gold and silver, and not a little copper and iron. yes, even tin and other metals which are used in the manufacture of useful articles and ornaments, as well as implements of war. He furthermore says that Taprobane (Ceylon) produces more gold and more large pearls than the continent of India, and people's raiment is interwoven with gold and ornamented with gems. He further relates about gold digging ants amongst the Dards<sup>1</sup> and says that the rivers carry gold dust<sup>2</sup>, and that part of it is given in tribute to the king.

Another proof is the numbers of mines still being worked in India. According to Constable's Hand Atlas of India there are about 59 gold mines, 14 silver mines, 34 diamond mines, beside 105 iron-, 55 copper- and 21 lead mines.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Schiern's treatise on the gold digging ants, 1873. <sup>2</sup> Conf. Gertz's transl. of Lucian p. 158: An Indian ant, of those who dig gold. Mikylos: And to think that I, ass that I was, should have hesitated in my former life to provide myself with only a trifling portion of gold dust, to bring with me into the present! <sup>3</sup> Temple. India p. 308: India is one of the oldest gold-producing countries in the world. — Marshman says in his History of India I p. 10. that when Darius had conquered India, this land yielded  $\frac{1}{3}$  of his income and that the tribute was paid in gold, while the tribute from the rest of the state was only paid in silver. — Friedländer says in his Sittengeschichte III p. 50: Cleve who wandered about in the vaults of Murshadabad amongst heaps of Gold and jewels

The great conquerors whose desire it was to reach India also give evidence of this. We must first mention the traditions concerning Dionysus and Hercules, then the invasions of Cyrus, Darius, Alexander, the Çakas (Scythians), Mahmud of Ghasna, the Mongol Tamerlan, (even Napoleon's thoughts have been busy with India) until at last, of European Mercantile Companies, the English in 1757 gained the mastery and after the mutiny in 1857 proclaimed Queen Victoria „Empress of India“. The country is now governed by a Viceroy.

Considering these things can we wonder that we in India find a God of Riches, a god for those riches that grow in the mountain and not those that grow in the fields?

---

— — still his purchase of diamonds came in Madras alone to 25,000 £, and a box with jewellery belonging to his wife was valued at 200,000 £.

## INDEX.

---

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>Aborigenes 1. 41.</p> <p>Acland 94.</p> <p>Ādikartar 69.</p> <p>Aditi 49. 54. 75. 76. 112. 113.</p> <p>Āditya 59. 75. 76. 81. 98. 108.</p> <p>Agastya 84. 91. 98. 140.</p> <p>Āgneya astra 179.</p> <p>Agni 26. 135. 149. 171.</p> <p>Agni's tears 128</p> <p>Aha 170.</p> <p>Ahalyā 89. 91.</p> <p>Āilavīla 182.</p> <p>Āirāvata 24. 83. 84.</p> <p>Āirāvata, king of the ser-<br/>pents 28.</p> <p>Āirāvata 83.</p> <p>Ajāgara 29.</p> <p>Ākāṣa-Grāṅgā 162.</p> <p>Alakā 186.</p> <p>Alakādhīpa 182. 186.</p> <p>Amara 43.</p> <p>Amaravatī 87.</p> <p>Ambrosia, see Amṛta.</p> <p>Amṛta, Amrita 9. 20. 21.</p> | <p>27. 39. 45. 46. 49. 51.</p> <p>53. 80. 81. 92. 100. 170.</p> <p>184.</p> <p>Amṛta-manthana 20.</p> <p>Amṛta 56.</p> <p>Anala 170. 176.</p> <p>Anaṅga 164.</p> <p>Ananta 21. 22.</p> <p>Andhaka 166.</p> <p>Āṅgiras 72.</p> <p>Anila 170. 176.</p> <p>Annihilation 57.</p> <p>Antaka 138.</p> <p>Antardhāna 187.</p> <p>Anuhrada 8.</p> <p>Apsaras 21. 52. 86. 90. 100<br/>123. 137. 170.</p> <p>Arjuna 42. 85. 123. 150. 185.</p> <p>Arms, ten, 149.</p> <p>Aruṇa 77. 78.</p> <p>Arvuda 30.</p> <p>Aryaka 30.</p> <p>Aryaman 56.</p> <p>Aryans 42.</p> |
|--|---|

- Açvapati 140.  
 Açvaçiras 121.  
 Açvasena 30.  
 Açvins 128. 129.  
 Asi 75.  
 Assam 42.  
 Assembly-hall 80. 87.  
 Asura 1. 2. 3. 9. 21. 24.  
     27. 30. 41. 49. 122.  
 Atri 27. 71. 101. 177.  
 Ayodhyā 161.  
 —————  
 Bark 158.  
 Bengal 1. 42.  
 Bhadrā 179.  
 Bhaga 56. 165.  
 Bhaga-netra 155. 164. 165.  
     -ghan 166. -han 166.  
     -hara 166. -nipātana 166.  
 Bhāgavata-Purāṇa 121.  
 Bhāgīrathī 162.  
 Bhānu 77.  
 Bhāradvāja 83. 104.  
 Bharata 98.  
 Bhārata 73.  
 Bhīma 36. 42.  
 Bhīmasena 36.  
 Bhogavatī 29.  
 Bhrgu, Bhrigu 21. 42. 139.  
     146. 151. 175.  
 Bhujaga 29.  
 Bhūrītejas 171.  
 Bhūta 105.  
 Bhūtī 106.  
 Bluethroat 24.  
 Boar 114.  
 Bowman 122.  
 Brahma 57. 63. 67. 152.  
 Brahmā 21. 22. 24. 57. 69.  
     72. 74. 93. 104. 105. 112.  
     148. 171. 185.  
 Brahmā's assembly-hall 72.  
     73.  
 Brahmā's day 58.  
 Brahmā's night 58.  
 Brahmā's seat 72.  
 Brahmā's worlds 72.  
 Brahmācārin 158.  
 Brahman 57. 162.  
 Brāhmaṇa 41. 153. 157.  
 Brāhmaṇa-murder 91.  
 Brahmanic worlds 145.  
 Brahmarṣi 104. 146.  
 Brahmaçiras 150.  
 Brandes, Edv., 160.  
 Bull 150.  
 —————  
 Cāitraratha 185.  
 Oakradharman 180.  
 Oakravāka 170. 180.  
 Caṇḍāla 160.  
 Candra 177.  
 Candramas 177.  
 Cannibal 30. 34. 187.

- Cāraṇa 127.  
 Cārudatta 160.  
 Caturmukha 148.  
 Ceylon 188.  
 Chariot 83.  
 Charioteer 83.  
 Churchyard 159.  
 Churning of the ocean 9. 45.  
 Cikura 30.  
 Citrabhānu 7.  
 Cord. sacrificial, 113.  
 Crematories 158.  
 Cyavana 129. 132.  
 Dadhica 84.  
 Dāitya 1. 2. 9. 24. 40. 46. 49.  
 Damayantī 135.  
 Daṁṣa 8.  
 Dānava 2. 9. 24. 25. 41. 160.  
 Daṇḍa 138. 139.  
 Dasra 128.  
 Dasya 1. 28.  
 Daxa prajāpati 1. 2. 75. 77.  
 92. 137. 150. 171. 177.  
 Daxa prajāpati's offer 163.  
 Daxinā diṣ 123.  
 Death 155.  
 Deeds 45.  
 Deva, Deva's 40. 43. 46.  
 81. 140. 144. 149.  
 Devadatta 84.  
 Devadeva 148.  
 Devādhīpa 82.  
 Devaloka 84.  
 Devamātar 76.  
 Devaraja 82.  
 Devarṣi 146.  
 Devaçarman 90.  
 Devasenā 142.  
 Devayāna 81.  
 Devendra 82.  
 Dhanada 182.  
 Dhanañjaya 30.  
 Dhanapati 182.  
 Dhaneçvara 182.  
 Dhanvantari 23. 45. 52.  
 Dhara 170.  
 Dharma 5. 50. 106. 188  
 146. 153. 170. 178.  
 Dharmaraja 188.  
 Dharmendra 138.  
 Dhatar 56. 70. 80.  
 Dhṛtarāṣṭra 30  
 Dhruva 170.  
 Dhūmorṇā 137.  
 Dhundhu 8.  
 Dhūrjaṭi 154.  
 Diadem 150. 160.  
 Dissolution 57. 81.  
 Discus 26. 27.  
 Diti 2. 49. 54.  
 Div 84.  
 Divāukas 43.  
 Duhsahā 106.

- Durgā 151. 159.  
 Dwarf 112. 114.  
 Dyāus 93.  
 Dyo 93.  
 Dyumatsena 140.  
 —————  
 Earth 46. 55.  
 Egg 100.  
 Elephant 24. 83.  
 —————  
 Fire 153.  
 Flagstaff 83.  
 Fork 151.  
 Funeral pile 158. 159.  
 —————  
 Gandhamādana 43. 183.  
 184. 187.  
 Gandharva 7. 20. 52. 126.  
 137.  
 Gandharvī 92.  
 Gaṅgā 171.  
 Gaṅgā Bhāgīrathī 160.  
 Ganges 147. 161. 163.  
 Garuḍa 77. 78. 79. 105. 161.  
 Garutmat 79.  
 Gāurī 101.  
 Gāutama 88  
 Gay 158.  
 Gem, celestial, 22 169  
 Ghaṭotkaca 42.  
 Ghr̥tācī 125.  
 Gods 20. 21. 24. 27.  
 Gold sand 181. 184.  
 Go-loka 93.  
 Gomatī 29.  
 Good deeds 45.  
 Grassmann 142.  
 Grīṣma 94.  
 Guhyādhīpa 182.  
 Guhyaka 128. 185. 186.  
 Guṇakeçī 83. 84.  
 —————  
 Halāhala 43. 45. 51. 149.  
 Haṁsa 74.  
 Haṁsikā 92.  
 Hara 154.  
 Hare 179.  
 Hari 51. 52. 105. 109. 114.  
 119. 121. 143.  
 Harivaṁṣa 56. 121. 143. 171.  
 Hayaçiras 117.  
 Havyavāhana 171.  
 Heaven 161.  
 Hell 140.  
 Hemakūṭa 184.  
 Heroes 87.  
 Hideous 156.  
 Himālaya 43.  
 Himavat 74. 84. 148. 151.  
 161. 163. 183.  
 Hindu 152.  
 Hindu tribes 42.  
 Hiraṇmaya 79.  
 Hiraṇvatī 79.  
 Hiranyakaçipu 8. 117.



Hiranyakṛt 171.  
 Hiranyapati 151.  
 Hiranyapura 3.  
 Hiranyasaras 178.  
 Hiranyatīrtha 178.  
 Hiranyāxa 116.  
 Homadhenu 93.  
 Horse's head 117.  
 Horse, sacrifice of, 161.  
 Hot season 93.  
 Hrisikeṣa 52.  
 Hutaḥuj 173.  
 Hutāṇa 171. 173.  
 Hutāṇana 174.

— —

Ilavilā 181. 182.  
 Incarnation 110. 112.  
 Indra 27. 28. 40. 42. 46.  
     56. 81. 87. 88. 89. 90.  
     98. 103. 114. 122. 135.  
     143. 149. 176.  
 Indra-loka 84.  
 Indrāṇī 83.  
 Indraship 81.  
 Indu 177.  
 Invention of arms 89.  
 Īcāna 146. 155.  
 Īkumati 29.

— — —

Jambha 8. 122.  
 Jāmbūnada-saras 185.

Jarū 35.  
 Jātavedas 171. 175.  
 Jaya 30.  
 Jayanta 56. 177.  
 Jewels 169.  
 Jvalana 171.  
 Jyotsnākālī 101. 179.  
 —————  
 Kadru 77.  
 Kāikasī 181.  
 Kāilāsa 83. 93. 183. 185.  
 Kaitābha 119. 122.  
 Kaitava 8. 9.  
 Kākutstha  
 Kāla 62. 150. 156.  
 Kālakañja 1.  
 Kalakuta 24.  
 Kālanemi 8.  
 Kālāntaka 138.  
 Kālaprṣṭha 30.  
 Kāleyya 1.  
 Kālī 152.  
 Kālidāsa 93. 104. 149. 150.  
     151. 165.  
 Kālīṅga 1.  
 Kalpa 144. 145.  
 Kāma 164.  
 Kāmadughā 93.  
 Kāmaduh 93.  
 Kāmalāxa 8. 166.  
 Kāiyaka 34.  
 Kāṇḍava 184.

- Kapila 161.  
 Karkoṭaka 30.  
 Karnikāra-wood 148.  
 Kārtikeya 171.  
 Kaçyapa prajāpati 1. 2. 39.  
     54. 55. 76. 93. 178.  
 Kācyapeya 79.  
 Kathā-Sarit-Sāgara 164.  
 Kāunteya 96.  
 Kāustuva 23. 46. 104.  
 Kāuvera tīrtha 186.  
 Keçava 52.  
 Keçin 6. 8.  
 Khalin 1.  
 King-ṛṣi's 146.  
 Kinnara 21. 37. 44. 127.  
 Kinnareçvara 182.  
 Kirmira 8.  
 Kratu 71.  
 Krāuñca 172. 180.  
 Kṛṣṇa 102. 121.  
 Kṛta-yuga 50. 100.  
 Krodhavaças 185.  
 Kumāra 171.  
 Kumāra-sambhava 165.  
 Kumbhakarṇa 181.  
 Kunti's son 96.  
 Kūrma-incarnation 122.  
 Kuru 169. 184.  
 Kuruids 42.  
 Kuruxetra 29.  
 Kuça-grass 170.  
 Kuvera 1. 135. 151. 180.  
     181.  
 ————  
 Lañkā 181. 182.  
 Lapis lazuli 169.  
 Law 75.  
 Laxmī 23. 24. 45. 106. 187.  
 Light-world 88.  
 Lightning 153.  
 Liṅgāni devānam 44.  
 Lokāntakṛt 138.  
 Lokapāla 134.  
 Lokapitāmaha 70.  
 Lotus 104.  
 Lotus eyes 123.  
 Lotus ponds 184.  
 Lubbock 69.  
 ————  
 Mada 8.  
 Madana 164.  
 Madhu 8. 9. 119. 121. 187.  
 Madhusūdana 52. 111. 121.  
 Maelstrom 75.  
 Māgadha 1.  
 Maghavan 88.  
 Maghavat 135. 166.  
 Mahādeva 24 102. 107. 116.  
     151. 155.  
 Mahājaya 30.  
 Mahākālī 159.

- Mahāmeru 72. 135.  
 Mahāniraya 136. 140.  
 Mahāyogin 110.  
 Mahendra 82. 85.  
 Mahendrāpī 83.  
 Maheçvara 147. 150. 154.  
 Mahiṣa 6. 8. 152. 173.  
 Mālayavat 43.  
 Mānasa 58. 127.  
 Mandākinī 183. 185.  
 Mandara 21. 22. 45. 50. 85.  
 103. 148. 160.  
 Mandhātār 151.  
 Mani 30.  
 Mañki 8.  
 Man-lion 116.  
 Mantra 24.  
 Manmatha 164.  
 Mantrin 85.  
 Manu 56. 75. 170. 188.  
 Marici 2. 71. 75. 143.  
 Mārtaṇḍa 77. 128.  
 Marut 176. Maruts 142.  
 Marutvat 143.  
 Mātali 42. 83. 85.  
 Matsya-incarnation 122.  
 Maya 4. 8. 9. 122.  
 Meghadūta 104.  
 Meru 20. 43. 72. 85. 103.  
 148. 161. 169. 183. 184.  
 Messengers of death 137. 142.  
 Mild 157.  
 Milk 92. 169. 184.  
 Milk-sea 102. 105.  
 Minstrels 46.  
 Mittra 56. 99.  
 Mittra-Varuṇa 99.  
 Moon 23. 25. 28. 34. 43.  
 149. 150. 153.  
 Mṛcchakaṭikā 160.  
 Mṛtyu 62. 138.  
 Mudikī 175.  
 Muni 86.  
 Mura 8.  
 Music 158.  
 Naga 1. 28. 29. 42. 77. 84.  
 100.  
 Nāgaloka 29.  
 Nāgaxayakara 80.  
 Nahuṣa 8. 30. 91.  
 Nāimiṣa 29.  
 Nalakūvara 181.  
 Nalinī 185.  
 Namuci 8. 90. 92.  
 Nanda 160.  
 Nandana 86. 182. 185.  
 Nandini 93.  
 Nara 24. 26. 27. 127.  
 Nārada 140. 146.  
 Naraka 8. 9. 122.  
 Nārāyaṇa 21. 22. 23. 25.  
 26. 119.  
 Nārāyaṇa astra 105.

- Narasiṃha 116.  
 Nāsatya 128.  
 Naxatra 177.  
 Nectar 21. 23. 24. 25.  
 Nidhipa 182.  
 Nikumbha 8.  
 Nīla, mountain 169. 188.  
 Nīla, king, 175.  
 Nilakaṇṭha 28. 149.  
 Niraya 29.  
 Nirmocana 3.  
 Nirvāṇa 65.  
 Niṣadha 29. 79. 127. 134.  
 Nivāta-Kavaca 1. 7.  
 Nṛ-siṃha 116.  
 ———  
 Ocean 21. 100.  
 Offering 74.  
 Offering cow 93.  
 ———  
 Padma 74. 106. 187  
 Padmanābha 30. 104.  
 Pāka 8.  
 Paṇḍuid 42.  
 Pannaga 29.  
 Pannagāçaka 80.  
 Parambrahma 103.  
 Parjanya 56. 82. 93. 96. 97.  
 98.  
 Pārtha 97. 123.  
 Pārvatī 151. 164.  
 Pāça. a noose, 101.  
 Paçupati 148.  
 Pātāla 3. 29. 51.  
 Pāuloma 1.  
 Pāvaka 172.  
 Pāvaki 171. 172.  
 Pāvana 176.  
 Peacock's tail 160.  
 Penance 87. 158.  
 Pināka 150.  
 Pinakadhṛk 162.  
 Pinākin 151.  
 Piṅgeça 171.  
 Piçāca 37.  
 Pitamaha 70.  
 Pitṛ's 140. 143.  
 Pitṛ-loka 136. 139. 161.  
 Pitṛ-rāja 135.  
 Pitṛnam prabhu 135. 136.  
 Plavaṅga 171.  
 Poison 24.  
 Prabhāsa 178.  
 Prajāpati Brahmā 70. 112.  
 143. 144. 146,  
 Prajāpati 15. 71.  
 Pracetas 163.  
 Pralaya 57. 61.  
 Prahāda 9. 172.  
 Prahṛāda 89. 92.  
 Pratyūsa 170.  
 Pretaraja 135. 138.  
 Pṛthā 3.  
 Pulaha 71.

- Pulastya 71.  
 Puloma 8. 89. 175.  
 Pulomā 95  
 Punishments of hell 139.  
 Purandara 50. 54.  
 Puruṣa 58. 112.  
 Pūsan 56. 164.  
 Puṣkara 101. 179.  
 Puṣkaramālīnī 87.  
 Puspaka 183.  
 ———  
 Raghunandana 53.  
 Rāhu 9. 24. 25. 179.  
 Rāhu's head 27.  
 Rainy season 93. 94.  
 Rājarāja 182.  
 Rama 150.  
 Rāmāyaṇa 1. 39. 161. 189.  
 Rasātala 92.  
 Rāvaṇa 135. 180. 182. 183.  
 Ravi 56.  
 Raxas, Rāxasa 35.  
 Rāxasa 1. 7. 30. 33. 35.  
 36 38. 42.  
 Rāxasī 31. 32.  
 Rbhū's 144. 145.  
 Riddhi 181.  
 R̥gveda 107.  
 R̥ṣi 7. 75. 124. 145. 146.  
 R̥tusam̐hāra 94.  
 Roads, two, 140.  
 Roga 138.  
 Rohinī 92. 178 179.  
 Ruci 90.  
 Rud 154.  
 Rudra 51. 75. 112. 151.  
 154. 166. 188.  
 Rudra-Çiva 147.  
 Rudra's 146.  
 Rudrasūna 172.  
 Rulers of the world 75.  
 ———  
 Çacī 83. 87. 91.  
 Çakra 9. 56. 82. 87. 114.  
 123. 125 135. 143.  
 Çakra-loka 84.  
 Çakravūpin 30.  
 Çambhu 163.  
 Çamī-wood 176.  
 Çanivara 8.  
 Çañkara 45. 51. 157. 158.  
 187.  
 Çañkha 84. 101. 105.  
 Çāntanu 171.  
 Çārṅga 105.  
 Çāryāti 132.  
 Çaçin 177.  
 Çatakratu 34. 88. 96. 143.  
 Çeṣa 29. 30. 105. 109.  
 Çukhinī 171.  
 Çiçupāla 121.  
 Çitikanṭha 149.  
 Çiva 15. 53. 71. 106. 108.  
 147 149. 154. 157. 161.

163. 164. 165. 166. 187. 188.  
 Çivā 171.  
 Çrī 45. 89. 106. 140.  
 Çrīkantha 149.  
 Çrīvatsa 104. 113.  
 Çrutāvati 83.  
 Çūdra's 129.  
 Çukra 8.  
 Çūla 151.  
 Çūladhara 151.  
 Çūlapāṇi 151.  
 Çūlin 151.  
 Çūrpanakhā 181.  


---

 Sabha 87. 186.  
 Sacrifice 87.  
 Sacrifice of horses 81.  
 Sudhya 167.  
 Sāgara 161.  
 Saha 175.  
 Sahadeva 175.  
 Sahasrāxa 82.  
 Sālva 8. 9.  
 Salvation 108.  
 Samhlāda 8.  
 Saṁkha 187.  
 Saṁyamana 136.  
 Saramā 138.  
 Sarpa 28.  
 Satyavat 137. 140.  
 Sāṅgandhika-lotus 183. 186.  
 Savitar 56. 81. 128. 164.  
 Sāvitra 148.  
 Sāvitrī 74. 140.  
 Serpent 28.  
 Serpent-world 29.  
 Severe 154.  
 Siddha 24. 123. 128. 166.  
 167. 184.  
 Siddhi 101.  
 Signs of the devās 44.  
 Sin 158.  
 Skull 159.  
 Slaughter of the Asura's 45.  
 Snakes 160. 161.  
 Soma 101. 102. 134. 170. 177.  
 Soma-offer 129.  
 Sorcery 30.  
 Soul 62.  
 Srutasena 30.  
 Steed, the white, 23.  
 Storm-gods 146.  
 Subhadrā 92.  
 Sudarçana 26. 105.  
 Sudhā 92.  
 Sudharmā 83.  
 Sukanyā 132. 134.  
 Sumālī 181. 182.  
 Sumukha 30. 42. 43. 79. 84.  
 Sun 25. 28. 34. 43. 57. 75.  
 80. 149. 153. Names of  
 the sun 81. 87.  
 Sunābha 101.

- Sunāman 79.  
 Sunetra 29.  
 Sunriso-hill 34.  
 Sunshade 100.  
 Suparna 43. 78.  
 Suprajā 77.  
 Sūr 75.  
 Sura 1. 2. 21. 43. 51. 81. 88.  
 Surabhī 29. 92. 93.  
 Surendra 173.  
 Sureṇu 77.  
 Suruo 79.  
 Surūpa 92.  
 Surya 75. 81.  
 Suvala 79.  
 Suvarcala 76.  
 Suvarcas 79.  
 Svadhā 92.  
 Svāhā 171.  
 Svar 75. 84.  
 Svarbhānu 9. 28.  
 Svarga 43. 45. 72. 83. 85.  
 87. 139. 183.  
 Svargadvāra 84.  
 Svarga-gāmin 87.  
 Svargaloka 84.  
 Svargati 84.  
 Svastika 30.  
 Svayambhū 70.  
 ———  
 Tālajamgha 8.  
 Taprobane 192.  
 Taraka 8. 9. 41. 89. 165. 173.  
 Tarakāxa 8. 166.  
 Tawney 164.  
 Taxaka 30. 42.  
 Thunderbolt 84. 122.  
 Tilottama 88. 148.  
 Tīrtha 31.  
 Tortoise 21.  
 Trāilokya 54  
 Tridaça 43.  
 Tridiva 43.  
 Tridivāukasa 56.  
 Triloka 3. 39. 40.  
 Trilokakṛt 70.  
 Trimūrti 111.  
 Trinetra 149.  
 Tripura 166. 187.  
 Tripuraghatin 167.  
 Tripuraghna 167.  
 Tripurāntakara 167.  
 Tripurārdama 167.  
 Triṇiras 8. 9. 90.  
 Triṇūla 151.  
 Trivikrama 114.  
 Tumbura 127.  
 Tvaṣṭar 56. 84. 90.  
 Tvāṣṭri 76. 128.  
 ———  
 Uccaiḥravas 45. 49. 53. 83.  
 Udaya-hill 34.  
 Umā 148. 149. 151. 161. 187.  
 Umāpati 151.

- Upasunda 8. 9.  
 Uraga 29.  
 Urvācī 123.  
 Uṣanas 8. 149. 169.  
 Utathya 101. 102.  
 Uttara-Kuru-land 167.  
 —————  
 Vahni 171.  
 Vāidehī 35.  
 Vāijayanta 83.  
 Vāikuntha 105.  
 Vāinateya 79.  
 Vāiṣṭavāna 176. 182. 186.  
 Vāiṣṭvanara 171.  
 Vāiṣṇava astra 105.  
 Vāitarāṇī 136. 140.  
 Vāivasvata 77. 135. 136.  
 Vajra 84.  
 Vaka 31.  
 Vala 8. 89.  
 Vālakhilya 170.  
 Vali 8. 40. 92. 114. 122.  
 Varāha 114.  
 Varṣa 94.  
 Varuṇa 3. 22. 34. 43. 44.  
 56. 99. 135. 176. 177.  
 179. 180.  
 Varuṇālaya 34.  
 Vāruṇī 45. 49. 93. 101. 102.  
 Vaçiṣṭha 71. 146. 171.  
 Vāsava 81. 82.  
 Vasu 170.  
 Vāsudeva 160.  
 Vasuki 22. 29. 30. 42. 45.  
 Vāta 176.  
 Vātāpi 8. 9.  
 Water 153.  
 Vāyu 43. 173. 176. 177.  
 Weapons 84.  
 Veda's 86. 116. 118. 120.  
 153. 163. 173.  
 Vegavat 89.  
 Vibhāvasu 171.  
 Vibhīṣaṇa 181. 183.  
 Vidyunmāla 8. 166.  
 Vijaya 84. 151.  
 Vinā 126.  
 Vinata 77. 79.  
 Vinatāsūnu 79.  
 Vindhya 160.  
 Wine 23.  
 Vipracitti 8. 9.  
 Vira 8.  
 Virūpāxa 8.  
 Viçravas 181. 182.  
 Viçvakarman 4. 101. 107.  
 136. 186. 187.  
 Viçvakṛt 70.  
 Viçvarūpa Triçiras 90.  
 Viṣṇu 21. 24. 27. 41. 46.  
 49. 56. 63. 75. 79. 88. 90.  
 91. 102. 108. 114. 122.  
 148. 173.  
 Viṣṇu's forehead 72.



- Viṣṇu's navel 72. 74.  
 Vivasvat 56. 136.  
 Vivindya 8.  
 Vixava 8.  
 Vṛhaspati 91. 114. 146.  
 Vṛṣabhadhaja 150.  
 Vṛṣāṅka 150.  
 Vṛṣaparvan 8.  
 Vṛtra, Vritra 7. 8. 84. 90.  
 114.  
 Vulture 157.  
 — — —  
 Xatriya 150.  
 —  
 Yama 77. 101. 135. 136.  
 170. 176.  
 Yama-daṇḍa 138.  
 Yama's dogs 138.  
 Yama-dūta 138.  
 Yamāntakā 138.  
 Yama-rāṣṭra 136.  
 Yama-sādana 136.  
 Yama-xaya 136.  
 Yama's deeds 140.  
 Yaçoda 160.  
 Yati 104.  
 Yātudhāna 8.  
 Yaxa 1. 42. 180.  
 Yaxādhipa 182.  
 Yaxaraja 182.  
 Yoga 108.  
 Yoga-sleep 74. 105.  
 Yoga-sūtra 108.  
 Yoga-worship 72.  
 Yogn 110.  
 Yuga 148. 155. Cfr. Kalpa.

Formerly published :

Dhammapadam. Ex tribus codicibus Hauniensibus Palice edidit, Latine vertit, excerptis ex commentario Palico notisque illustravit V. Fausbøll. Hauniæ 1855. — 2. Abbreviated Edition 1900.

Five Jātakas, containing a Fairy Tale, a Comical Story, and Three Fables. In the Original Pāli Text, with a Translation and Notes, by V. Fausbøll. Copenhagen 1861.

Two Jātakas. The original Pāli Text, with an English Translation and Critical Notes. By V. Fausbøll. 1870. (From the Journal of the R. A. S.).

The Dasaratha-Jātaka, being the Buddhist Story of King Rāma. The Original Pāli Text with a Translation and Notes by V. Fausbøll. Copenhagen 1871.

Ten Jātakas. The Original Pāli Text with a Translation and Notes, by V. Fausbøll. Copenhagen 1872.

The Sutta-Nipāta, being a collection of some of Gotama Buddha's dialogues and discourses. Edited by V. Fausbøll. Published for the Pāli Text Society. Part I. Text. London 1885. Part II. A Complete Phraseological Glossary to Suttanipāta. London 1894.

The Sutta-Nipāta translated by V. Fausbøll, Sacred Books of the East, vol. X. Oxford 1881. Sec. Edit. 1897.

Nogle Bemærkninger om enkelte vanskelige Pāli-Ord i Jātaka-Bogen. (Fra det danske Videnskabernes Selskabs Oversigter). 1888.

The Jātaka together with its Commentary. Vol. 1, with an Index by Dr. D. Andersen. London 1877—97.

Catalogue of the Mandalay Mss. in the India Office Library. J. P. T. S. 1897.

Fire Forstudier til en Fremstilling af den indiske Mythologi  
efter Mahābhārata. I Indbydelsesskrift til Københavns Uni-  
versitets Årsfest til Erindring om Kirkens Reformation. Kbh.  
1897.

---

Smaa historier fra Østerland. Efter det Persiske ved  
V. Fausbøll. Kbh. 1852.

Vægter-Versene i deres ældre og yngre Skikkelse, udgivne  
af V. Fausbøll. Med Afbildninger af Vægtere fra for-  
skjellige Tider. Kbh. 1862. 2det Oplag. ibidem, eodem.  
(Med Melodier). 3dje forøgede Oplag. ibidem, 1894.

Beretning om de vidtbekjendte Molboers vise Gjerninger og  
tapre Bedrifter. Ved V. Fausbøll. Kbh. 1862. 3dje  
forbedrede Udgave. Kbh. 1887. (Illustreret.)

Bidrag til en Ordbog over Gadesproget og saakaldt Daglig  
Tale, oplyst med over 5000 Exempler, hentede fra trykte  
Kilder, og med Henvisning til beslægtede Ord og Tale-  
maader i andre Sprog. Ved V. Kristiansen. Kbh. 1866.

Om 3 Lyde i almindelig, dannet Dansk, der hidtil ikke have  
været anerkjendte og opførte som selvstændige Selvlyde. (I  
Universitets-Jubilæets Danske Samfunds Blandinger) 1882.

---

